THE HUTH LIBRARY.

THE COMPLETE WORKS OF

THOMAS NASHE.

VOL. II.

PIERCE PENILESSE HIS SVPPLICATION TO THE DIUELL.

HARVEY-GREENE TRACTATES:

i. A *WONDERFULL STRANGE AND MIRACULOUS ASTROLOGICALL PROGNOSTICATION.*

ii. *STRANGE NEWES OF THE INTERCEPTING CERTAINE LETTERS,*

1592.
When Saul receiv'd no answer down from heav'n,
How quickly was his jealous passion driven
A def'r'ate course! He needs must cure the itch
Of his extreme defiers, by a Witch:
When we have lost our way to God, how levell,
How easy to be found's the way to the Devell.

FRANCIS QUARLES (CHERTSEY WORTHIES' Library Edition,
'Divine Fancies,' p. 216).
The South Library
Elizabetban-Jacobeann
Unique or Very Rare Books
in Verse and Prose
Largely
From the Library of
Henry Bath Esqr.

Edited with Introductions, Notes and Illustrations, etc.
by the Rev. Alexander B. Gosse, LL.D., F.S.A.

For private circulation only
The Huth Library.

THE

COMPLETE WORKS

OF

THOMAS NASHE.

IN FOUR VOLUMES.

FOR THE FIRST TIME COLLECTED AND EDITED WITH MEMORIAL-INTRODUCTION, NOTES AND ILLUSTRATIONS, ETC.,

BY THE REV.
ALEXANDER B. GROSART, LL.D. (EDIN.), F.S.A. (SCOT.),
St. George's, Blackburn, Lancashire.

VOL. II.

PIERCE PENILESSE HIS SVPPLICATION TO THE DIUELL.

HARVEY-GREENE TRACTATES:

i. A WOnderfull Strange AND Miraculous AstrologicaLL Prognostication.


1592.

PRINTED FOR PRIVATE CIRCULATION ONLY.

1883—84.

50 Copies.]
CONTENTS.

PAGE

Pierce Penilesse his SypPLICATION to the Diuell 1

Harvey-Greene Tractates—

1. A WONDERFULL STRANGE AND MIRACULOUS
ASTROLOGICALL PROGNOSTICATION . . 139'

2. STRANGE NEWES OF THE INTERCEPTING CER-
TAINE LETTERS . . . . . . . . 171
Late tyr'd with wo, even ready for to pine
With rage of love, I cald my Love vnkind;
She in whose eyes love, though vnfelt, doth shine,
Sweet said, that I true love in her shoulde find.
I joyed; but straight thus watred was my wine:
That love she did, but loved a love not blind;
Which would not let me, whom shee loued, decline
From nobler course, fit for my birth and mind.
And thencefore, by her love's authority,
Wild me these tempefts of vaine love to flie,
And anchor faft my selfe on Vertue's shore.
Alas, if this the only mettall be
Of love new-coind to help my beggary,
Deere, love me not, that you may love me more.

Sir Philip Sidney: 'Aphrophell and Stella,' xii.
V.

PIERCE PENILESSE
HIS SUPPLICATION TO THE
DIUELL.

1592.
NOTE.

For the exemplar of 'Pierce Penileffe' of 1592 as sanctioned by its Author, I am again indebted to the Huth Library. The semi-surreptitious one issued earlier in the same year by a different publisher—Richard Jhones, against whom good Nicholas Breton made complaint for his sharp practice in assigning to popular names productions that were not really theirs—was reprinted by Mr. J. Payne Collier, most perfunctorily and carelessly, for the 'Shakespeare Society' (1 vol., 1843). The title-page—showing the 'long taile' which Nash demands shall be suppressed—is given on our verso of that of 1592 prepared by him in substitution, together with Jhones's short Epistle. As an Appendix-Note to 'Pierce Penileffe,' I add at the close of our reproduction, such 'faults' of the Jhones edition as seem to call for record, albeit I suspect some at least belong to Mr. Collier himself, rather than to his (unique) exemplar. Be this as it may, our text corrects many irritating misprints, and gives better readings in several important places. It is a small 4to, 16 leaves, unpaged, and folios (i.e. on one side, from 17 to 40, 2—L. iii.). See our 'Memorial-Introduction—Critical,' in Vol. IV., for notices of this singular book, including a contemporary French translation; also 'Memorial-Introduction—Biographical,' in Vol. I.—A. B. G.
Pierce Penileffe

HIS SUPPLICATION

to the Diuell.

Barbaria grandis habere nihil.

Written by Tho. Nash, Gent.

LONDON,

Printed by Abell Ieffes, for
John Bubie, 1592.
PIERCE PENILESSE
HIS SUPPLICATION TO
THE DEUILL.

Describing the ouer-spreading of Vice, and
the suppression of Vertue.

Pleasantly interlac’d with variable delights: and
pathetically intermixt with conceived reprooﬁes.

Written by THOMAS NASH, Gentleman.

LONDON,
Imprinted by RICHARD IHONE, dwelling at the
Signe of the Rose and Crowne, nere
Holburne Bridge.
1592.

The Printer to the Gentlemen Readers.

Gentlemen,

In the Author’s absence, I haue been bold to publishe this pleasaunt
and wittie discourse of Pierce Penileffe, his Supplication to the Divell:
which title, though it may seeme strange and in it selfe somewhat
preposterous, yet if you vouchsafe the reading, you shall finde reaason,
as well for the Author’s vncoouth nomination, as for his vnwonted
beginning without epistle, proeme, or dedication: al which he hath
inferred conceitedly in the matter; but Ile be no blab to tell you in
what place. Befrow the looking, and I doubt not but you shall finde
dedication, epistle, and proeme to your liking.

Yours bounden in affection,
R. I.
A private Epistle of the Author to the Printer.

Wherein his full meaning and purpose (in publishing this Booke) is set foorth.

Aith I am verie forrie (Sir) I am thus vnawares betrayed to infamie. You write to me my booke is hasting to the second impression: he that hath once broke the Ice of impudence, neede not care how deepe he wade in discredite. I confesse it to be a meere toy, not deseruing any iudicial mans view: If it haue found any friends, so it is, you know very well that it was abroad a fortnight ere I knewe of it, and vncorrected and vnfinished it hath offred it selfe to the oppen scorne of the world. Had you not beene so froward in the republishing of it, you should haue had certayne Epiftles to Orators and Poets, to insert to the later end; As namely, to the Ghost of Machewill, of Tully, of Ouid, of Roscius, of Pace the Duke of Norfolks Ieeter: and lastly, to the Ghost of Robert Greene,
telling him, what a coyle there is with pamphleting on him after his death. These were prepared for *Pierce Penileffe* first setting forth, had not the feare of infection detained mee with my Lord in the Countrey.

Now this is that I would haue you to do in this second edition; Firft, cut off that long-tayld Title,* and let mee not in the forefront of my Booke, make a tedious Moûtebanks Oration to the Reader, when in the whole there is nothing praiſe-worthie.

I heare fay there be obscure imitators, that goe about to frame a second part to it, and offer it to fell in Paules Church-yard, and elsewhere, as from me. Let me request you, (as ever you wil expect any fauour at my hands) to get some body to write an Epiftle before it, ere you fet it to fale againe, importing thus much; that if any fuch lewd deuife intrude it felfe to their handes, it is a cofenage and plaine knauery of him that fels it to get mony, and that I haue no manner of interest or acquaintance with it. Indeed if my leysure were fuch as I could wysh, I might 'haps (halfe a yeare hence) write the retourne of the *Knight of the Poſt* from Hell, with the *Deuils* anſwer to the *Supplication*: but as for a second

* See it on verso of Nash's own title-page, p. 4.—G.
part of *Pierce Penileffe,* it is a most ridiculous rogery.*

Other newes I am aduertized of, that a scald triuiall lying Pamphlet, called *Greens groat'-worth of wit* is giuen out to be of my doing. God neuer haue care of my soule, but ytterly renounce me, if the leaft word or syllable in it proceeded from my penne, or if I were any way priuie to the writing or printing of it. I am growne at length to see into the vanitie of the worlde more than euer I did, and now I condemne my selfe for nothing fo much, as playing the dolt in Print. Out vpon it, it is odious, especially, in this moralizing age, wherein euery one feekes to shew himselfe a Polititian by mis-interpreting.

In one place of my Booke, *Pierce Penileffe* faith but to the Knight of the Poft, *I pray how might I call you,* and they say, I meant one *Howe,* a Knaue of that trade, that I neuer heard of before.

The Antiquaries are offended without cause, thinking I goe about to detraffe from that excellent profefion, when (God is my witnesse) I reuerence it as much as any / of them all, and had no manner of allusion to them that stumble at it. I hope they wil giue me leaue to think there be fooles of that Art as well as of all other; but to faye, I ytterly

* See on this in our Memorial-Introduction prefixed to Vol. I.; also *ibid.*, Critical, in Vol. IV.—G.
condemne it as an vnfruitfull studie, or seeme to despise the excellent quallified partes of it, is a most false and injurious surmise. There is nothing that if a man lift he may not wrest or peruert, I cannot forbid anie to thinke villainously, *Sed caueat emptor*, Let the interpreter beware: for none euer heard mee make Allegories of an idle text. Write who wil against me, but let him look his life be without scandale: for if he touch me neuer so litle, Ie be as good as the Blacke Booke to him and his kindred.

Beggerly lyes no beggerly wit but can inuent: who spurneth not at a dead dogge: but I am of another metall, they shall knowe that I liue as their euill Angell, to haunt them world without end, if they disquiet me without cause. Farewell, and let me heare from you as soone as it is come foorth. I am the Plagues prifoner in the Country as yet: if the sicknesse ceafe before the thirde impression, I will come and alter whatsoeuer may be offensive to any man, and bring you the latter ende.

Pierce Penileffe his Supplication
to the Diuell.

HAVING spent manie yeeres in studying how to liue, and liude a long time without mony: hauing tired my youth with follie, and surfetted my minde with vanitie, I began at length to looke backe to repentaunce, & addresse my endeuors to prosperitie: But all in vaine, I rate vp late, and rose earely, contended with the colde, and conuerfed with scarcitie: for all my labours turned to losse, my vulgar Muse was despised and neglected, my paines not regarded, or slighly rewarded, and I my selfe (in prime of my best wit) laid open to pouertie.

Whereupon (in a malecontent humor) I accused my fortune, raild on my patrones, bit my pen, rent my papers, & ragde in all points like a mad man. In which agony tormenting my selfe a long time, I grew by degrees to a milder discontent: and pausing a while ouer my standish, I resolued in verse to paynt forth my passion: which, best
agreeing with the vaine of my vnrest, I began to compleaine in this fort.

Why ift damnation to dispaire and dye,

When life is my true happinesse disease?

My foule, my foule, thy safetie makes me flie.
The faultie meanes, that might my paine appease.

Diuines and dying men may talke of hell,

But in my heart, her feuerall torments dwell:

Ah worthlesse Wit, to traine me to this woe,

Deceitfull Artes, that nourish Discontent:
Ill thrive the Follie that bewitcht me so:
Vaine thoughts adieu, for now I will repent.

And yet my wantes perswade me to proceede,

Since none takes pitie of a Scholler's neede.

Forgiue me, God, although I curse my birth,

And ban the aire, wherein I breathe a Wretch:
Since Miserie hath daunted all my mirth,
And I am quite vndone through promise-breach.

Oh frends, no frends, that then vngently frowne,

When changing Fortune casts vs head-long downe.
Without redresse complaynes my carelesse verse,
And Mydas-eares relent not at my moane:
In some farre Land will I my grieses
reherse,
Mongst them that will be mou'd when I
shall groane.

England (adieu) the Soyle that brought me foorth,
Adieu vnkinde, where skill is nothing woorth.

These Rymes thus abruptly set downe, I toft
my imagination a thousand waies, to see if I could
finde any meanes to relieue my estate: But all my
thoughts conferred to this conclusion, that the
world was vncharitable, & I ordained to be
*miserable. Thereby I grew to con-

* Miser est
 sider how many base men that wanted

quicunque
those partes which I had, enjoyed content

orumnam
at will, & had wealth at commaund: I

suam nequit
calde to minde a Cobler, that was worth fiue

occultare.
hundred pound, an Hoftler that had built a goodly

Fortuna
Inne, & might dispende forty pounds yerely by his

fauet fatus.
Land, a Carre-man in a leather pilche, that had

Fortuna
whipt out a thousand pound out of his

expendite
horse taile: and haue I more witte than

causam.
all these (thought I to my selfe)? am I better

Meritis
borne? am I better brought vp? yea, and better

expendite
fauored? and yet am I a begger?

causam.
What is the cause? how am I crost,
or whence is this curfe?
Euen from hence, that men that should employ such as I am, are enamoured of their own wits, and think whatever they do is excellent, though it be neuer fo fcuruie: that Learning (of the ignorant) is rated after the value of the inke and paper: and a Scruuener better paid for an obligation, than a Scholler for the beft Poeme he can make; that *euerie grosse brainde Idiot is suffered to come into print, who if hee set foorth a Pamphlet of the praife of Pudding-pricks, or write a Treatife of Tom Thumme, or ¦ exploitys of Vntrufe; it is bought vp thicke & three-folde, when better things lie dead. How then can we chufe but be needy, when ther are so many droans amongft vs? or euer proue rich, ¦ toyle a whole yeare for fair looks?

Gentle / Sir Philip Sidney, thou knewft what belonged to a Scholler, thou knewest what paines, what toile, what trauell, conduct to perfection: wel couldft thou giue euery Vertue his encouragement, euery Art his due, euery writer his desert: cause none more vertuous, witty, or learned than thy selfe.

But thou art dead in thy graue, and haft left too few succeffors of thy glory, too few to cherish the Sonn of the Muses, or water those budding hopes with their plentie, which thy bountie erft planted.
PIERCE PENILESSE.

Beleeue me, Gentlemen, for some croffe mis-happes, haue taught me experience, there is not that frictk obseruation of honour, which hath bene here-tofore. Men of great calling take it of merite, to haue their names eternizde by Poets; and whatsoever pamphlet or dedication encounters them, they put it vp their fleuues, and scarce giue him thankes that presents it. Much better is it for those golden Pens to raife such vngratefull Peasants from the Dung-hill of obscuritie, and make them equal in fame to the Worthies of olde, when their doting selfe-loue shall challenge it of dutie, and not onely giue them nothing themselues, but impouerish liberalitie in others.

This is the lamentable condition of our Times, that men of Arte muft seeke almes of Cormorants, & those that deserue best, be kept vnder by Dunces, who count it a policie to keep them bare, because they should follow their bookes the better: thinking belike, that, as preferment hath made them-selues idle, that were earst painfull in meaner places, so it wold likewise slacken the endeuours of those Students, that as yet strive to excell in hope of aduauncement. A good policie to suppreffe superfluous liberalitie. But, had it beene practised when they were promoted, the Yeomandry of the Realme had been better to passe than it is, and one Droane
should not have driven so many Bees from their honey-combs.

I, I, weele give loosers leave to talke: it is no matter what *Sic probo* and his pennileffe companions prate, whilest we have the gold in our coffers: this is it that will make a knaue an honest man, & my neighbour *Cramtons* tripling a better Gentleman than his Grand fier. O it is a trim thing when Pride, the sonne, goes before, & Shame, the father, followes after. Such presidents there are in our Comon-wealth a great many; not so much of them whome learning & Industrie hath exalted, (whome I prefer before *Genus et probatus*) as of Carterly vpstarts, that out-face Towne & Countrey in their veluets, when Sir *Rowland Ruffet-coat*, their dad, goes *tagging* every day in his round gascoynes of white cotton, & hath much a do (poore pennie-father) to keepe his vnthrift elbowes in reparations.

Marry, happy are they, say I, that haue such fathers to worke for them, whilst they plaie: for where other men turne ouer manie leaves to get bread and cheefe in their olde age, and studie twentie yeares to distill golde out of incke, our young maisters doo nothing but devise how to spend and aske counsaile of the wine and capons, how they may quicklieft confume their patrimonies. As for me, I liue secure from all such perturba-
tions: for (thankes bee to God) I am vacuus viator, and care not, though I meete the Commissioners of New-market-heath at high midnight, for any crosse, Images, or pictures that I carry about mee, more than needes.

Than needes, quoth I, nay, I would be ashamed of it, if Opus & Vfus were not knocking at my doore twentie times a weeke when I am not within: the more is the pitie, that such a franke Gentleman as I, shoulde want: but, since the dice doo runne so vntowardly on my side, I am partly prouided of a remedy. For wheras, those that stand most on their honour, haue shut vp their purses, & shift vs off with court-hollie-bread: & on the other side, a number of hypocriticall hot-spurres, that haue God alwaies in their mouthes, will giue nothing for Gods sake: I haue clapt vp a hand-some Supplication to the Diuell, and sent it by a good fellow, that I know will deliuer it.

And because you may beleue mee the better, I care not if I acquaint you with the circumstance.

I was informd of late daies, that a certaine blinde Retayler called the Diuel, vied to lend money vpon pawns or any thing, and would let one for a neede, haue a thousand poundes vppon a Statute Merchaut of his soule: or if a man plide him throughly, would truft him vppon a Bill of his hand, without any more circumsaunce. Besides,
hee was noted for a priuie Benefactor to Traytors and Parasites, and to aduaunce fooles and asses farre sooner than any: to be a greedie pursuer of newes, and so famous a Politician in purchasing, that Hel, which at the beginning was but an obscure Village, is now become a huge citie, wherunto all countryes are Tributary.

These manifest coniecutures of Plentie, assembled in one common-place of ability, I determined to clawe Auarice by the elboe, til his full belly gaue me a full hand, and let him blood with my pen (if it / might be) in the veine of liberality: and so (in short time) was this Paper-monster, Pierce Penileffe, begotten.

But written and all, heere lies the queftion, where shall I find this old Asse, that I may deliuer it? Maffe, thats true: they sy the Lawyers haue the deuill and al: and it is like enough he is playing Ambodexter amongst them. Fie; fie, the deuill a driuer in Westminifter Hall: it can neuer be.

Now, I pray, what do you imagine him to be? Perhaps you thinke it is not poſsible he should be so graue. Oh then, you are in an errour, for he is as formal as the best Scruener of them all. Marry, he doth not vfe to weare a night-cap, for his hornes will not let him: and yet I knowe a hundred, as well headed as he, that will make a iolly shift with
a Court-cup on their crownes, if the weather be colde.

To proceed with my tale: to Westminster Hall I went, and made a search of Enquiry, from the blacke gowne to the buckram bagge, if there were any such Sergeant, Bencher, Counsailer, Attorney, or petitogger, as Signior Cornuto Diabolo, with the good face? But they al (vna voce) affirmed, that he was not there: marry, whether hee were at the Exchange or no, amongst the ritch Merchants, that they could not tell: but it was likelier of the two, that I should meet with him, or heare of him, at the leaft, in those quarters. I faith, and say you fo, quoth I? and Ile bestow a little labour more, but Ile hunt him out.

Without more circumstance, thither came I: and, thrusting my selfe, as the manner is, amongst the confusion of languages, I asked (as before) whether he were there extant or no? But from one to another, Non novi Daemonem, was all the answer I could get. At length (as Fortune serued) I lighted vpon an old, straddling Usurer, clad in a damaske casslocke, edged with Fox-fur, a paire of trunke flops, sagging down like a shoo-maker's wallet, and a short thrid-bare gown on his backe, fac't with moath-eaten budge: vpon his head he wore a filthy, coarse biggin, & next it a garnish of night-caps, with a sage butten cap, of
the forme of a cow-shoard, ouerspread very orderly: a fat chuffe it was, I remember, with a gray beard cut short to the stumps, as though it were grimde, and a huge, woorme-eaten nose, like a cluseter of grapes hanging downe-wards. Of him I demaunted, if hee could tell mee any tidings of the partie I sought for.

By my troth, quoth he, stripling, (and then he caught) I lawe him not lately, nor know I certainly where he keepes: but thus much I heard / by a Broker, a friend of mine, that hath had some dealings with him in his time, that he is at home sicke of the goute, and will not bee spoked withal vnnder more than thou art able to giue, fom two or three [hundred] angels, if thou haft any fute to him: & then, perhaps, hele straine curtesie, with his legges in childe-bed, and come forth and talke with thee: but, otherwise, non est domi, hee is busie with Mammon, & t[h]e Prince of the North, how to build vp his kingdome, or fending his spirits abroad to vnndermine the maligners of his gouernment.

I, hearing of this colde comfort, tooke my leaue of him very faintly, and like a careles male-content, that knew not which way to turne, retired me to Paules, to feeke my dinner with Duke Humfrey; but, when I came there, the olde fouldioer was not vp. Hee is long a rising, thought I; but thats all
one, for hee that hath no money in his purse, must go dine with Sir John Best-betrust, at the signe of the chalk and the Post.

Two hongry turnes had I scarce fetcht in this waft gallery, when I was encountred by a neat pedanticall fellow, in forme of a citizen: who thrufting himfelfe abruptly into my company, like an Intelligencer, began very earneſtly to queſtion me about the caufe of my diſcontent, or what made me ſo ſad, that ſeemed too young to be acquainted with ſorrow. I nothing nice to vnfold my estate to any what ſoever, discouſt to him the whole circumſtance of my care, and what toyll and paines I had tooke in ſearching for him that would not be heard of. Why ſir (quoth he), had I bene priuie to your purpose before, I could haue eafd you of this trauell; for if it be the deuill you ſeeke for, know I am his man. I pray, ſir, how might I call you? A knight of the Poſt, quoth he, for Io Am tearmed: a fellowe that will ſwear you any thing for twelue pence: but indeed, I am a spirite in nature and effence, that take vpon me this humaine shape, onely to fet men together by the eares, and ſend foules by millions to hell.

Now truſt me, a ſubſtantiall trade: but when doe you thinke you could ſend next to your maifter? why, euery day: for there is not a
cormorant that dies, or Cut-purse that is hanged, but I dispatch letters by his foule to him, and to all my friends in the Low-cuntries: wherefore, if you haue any thing that you would haue transported, giue it me, and I will see it deliuered.

Yes, marry haue I (quoth I) a certaine Supplication heere vnto your MaiSTER, which you may peruse if it please you. With that he opened it, and read as followeth.
To the high and mightie Prince of Darknessse,
Donfell dell Lucifer, King of Acheron, Stix,
and Phlegeton, duke of Tartary, mar-
quesse of Cocytus, and Lord
high Regent of Lymbo:
his distrested
Orator, Pierce Pennileffe, wisheth encrease of damnation and malediction eternall, per Iesum Christum Dominum Nostrum.

Oft humbly sueth vnto your sinfulnes, your single soald Orator, Pierce Pennileffe: that whereas your impious excellence hath had the poore tennement of his purse any time this halfe yee[r for your daunc-
ing schoole, and he (nothwithstanding) hath received no penny nor croffe for farme, according to the usuall manner, it may please your gracelesse Majestie to consider of him,
and give order to your servant Auarice he may be dispatched: insomuch as no man here in London can have a dauncing schoole without rent, and his wit and knauery cannot be maintained with nothing. Or, if this be not so plausible to your honorable infernalship, it might seem good to your helhood to make extent upon the soules of a number of uncharitable Cormorants, who, having incurd the danger of a _Premunire_ with medling with matters that properly concerne your owne person, deserve no longer to live (as men) amongst men, but to bee incorporated in the society of diuels. By which means the mightie controller of fortune and imperious subuerter of desteny, delicious gold, the poore mans God, and Idoll of Princes (that lookes pale and wanne through long imprisonment) might at length be restored to his powrful Monarchie, and eftsoon bee fette at liberty, to helpe his friends that have need of him.

I knowe a great sort of good fellowes that

*Id est, for the
fredome of
gold.*

and a number of needy Lawyers (who now mourn in threed-bare gownes for his thral-dome) that would goe neere to poison his keepers with false Latine, if that might procure his enlargement: but inexorable yron detaines him in the dungeon of the night, so that (poore creature)
hee can neither traffique with the Mercers and Tailers as he was wont, nor dominere in Tauernes as he ought.

Famine, Lent, and defloration, fit in onyon-kind jackets before the doore of his indurance, as a Chorus in the Tragedy of Hospitality, to tell hunger & pouerty thers no reliefe for them there: and in the inner part of this vgly habitation stands Greedinesse, prepared to deououre all that enter, attyred in a Capouch of written parchment, buttond downe before with Labels of waxe, and lin’d with sheepes fells for warmenes: his Cap furd with cats skinnes, after the Muscouie fashion, and all to be tassfeld with Angle-hookes, in stead of Aglets, ready to catch hold of all those to whom hee shewes any humblenes: for his breeches, they were made of the lifts of broad cloaths, which he had by letters pattents assfured him and his heyres, to the utter ouerthrowe of Bowcafes and cushion makers, and bumbafted they were, like Beere barrels, with statute Marchants and forseytures: but of all, his shooes were the strangest, which, being nothing else but a couple of crab shells, were toothd at the toes with two sharp sixpennie nailes, that digd vp euery dunghill they came by for gold, and snarld at the stones as hee went in the street, because they weare so common for men, women, and children,
tread vpon, and hee could not deuife how to wreft an odde fine out of any of them.

Thus walks hee vp and downe all his life time, with an yron crow in his hand instead of a staffe, and a Sariant Mace in his mouth, (which night and day he gnaws vpon) and either busies himselfe in setting filuer lime twigs, to entangle yoong Gentlemen, and casting foorth filken shraps, to catch Woodcocks, or in fyuing of Muckehills and shop-duft, whereof he will boult a whole cartload to gaine a bowd Pinne.

On the other side, Dame Niggardize, his wife, in a fedge rugge kirtle, that had beene a mat time out of minde, a course hempen raile about her shoulers, borrowed of the one end of a hop-bag, an apron made of Almanackes out of date, (such as stand vpon screens, or on the backside of a dore in a Chandlers shop) & an old wiuers pudding pan on her head, thrumd with the parings of her nailes, fate barrelling vp the droppings of her nofe, in stede of oyle, to faime wool withall, and would not adventure to spit without halfe a dozen of porrengers at her elbow.

The house, (or rather the hell) where these two Earthwormes encaptiued this beautiful Subsbaunce, was vaft, large, strong built, and well furnished, all saue the Kitchin: for that was no bigger than the
Cooks roome in a ship, with a little court chimney, about the compass of a *Parenthesis* in proclamation-print: then judge you what dim/inutie dishes came out of this doues-neaft. So likewise, of the Buttrie: for whereas in houses of such stately foundation, that are built to outward shewe so magnificent, every Office is answerable to the Hall, which is principal, there the Buttrie was no more but a blind Cole-house, vnder a paire of stayres, wherein (vprisng & down lying) was but one fingle kilderkin of small beere, that wold make a man, with a carroufe of a spoonful, runne through an Alphabet of faces. Nor vfd they any glasses or cups (as other men), but onely little farthing ounce boxes, whereof one of them fild vp with froath (in manner and forme of an Ale-house) was a meales allowance for the whole houfhold. It were lamentable to tell what miserie the Rattes and Myce endured in this hard world: how, when all supply of vitualls failed them, they went a Boot-haling one night to Sinior Greedinesse bed-chamber, where finding nothing but emptines and vaftitie, they encountred (after long inquisitiō) with a cod-peece, well dunged & manured with greace (which my pinch-fart penie-father had retaind from his Bachelorship, vntill the eating of these presents). Vppon that they set, and with a courageous assault rent it cleane away from the
breeches, and then carried it in triumph, like a coffin, on their shoulders betwixt them. The verie spiders and dust weavers, that wont to set vp their loomes in euery windowe, decaied and undone through the extreame dearth of the place, (that afforded them no matter to worke on) were constrained to breake, against their wills, and goe dwell in the countrey, out of the reach of the broome and the wing: and generally, not a flea nor a cricket that carried anie braue minde, that would stay there after he had once tasted the order of their fare. Onely vnfortunate golde (a pre-definit flaxe to drudges and fooles) liues in endless bondage ther amongst them, and may no way be releaft, except you send the rot halfe a yeare amongst his keepers, and so make them away with a murrion, one after another.

O but a far greater enormitie raigneth in the heart of the Court: Pride, the peruerter Pryde.

The complaflnt of the heart of all Vertue, fitteth appareled in the Merchants spoiles, and ruine of yoong Citizens, and scorneth Learning, that gaue their vp-start Fathers titles of Gentry.

All malcontent fits the greasie sonne of a Cloathier, and complaines (like a de-caied Earle) of the ruine of ancient houses: whereas, the Weauers loomes firft framed the web of his honour, and the locks/of wool,
PIERCE PENILESSE.

that bushes and Brambles haue tooke for toule of insolent shepee, that would needs striue for the wall of a fir-bush, haue made him of the tenths of their tarre, a Squier of low degree: and of the collections of the scatterings, a Justice, *Tam Marti quam Mercurio*, of Peace and of Coram. Hee will bee humorous, forsooth, and haue a broode of fashions by himselfe. Sometimes (because Loue commonly weares the liuerey of Witte) hee will be an *Inamorato Poeta*, and sonnet a whole quire of paper in praife of Lady Swin-fnout, his yeollow-fac'd Miftres, and wear a feather of her rain-beaten fanne for a favor, like a fore-horse. *Al Italionato* is his talke, and his spade peake is as sharpe as if he had been a Pioner before the walles of *Roan*. Hee will despize the barbarisme of his owne Countrey, and tell a whole Legend of lyes of his travailes vnto *Constan-tinople*. If he be challenged to fight, for his delaterye excuse, hee ob-iects that it is not the custome of the Spaniard, or the Germane, to looke backe to euer dog that barkes. You shall see a dapper Jacke, that hath beene but ouer at *Deepe*, wring his face round about, as a man would stirre vp a mustard pot, and talke English through the teeth, like *Iaques Scabd-hams*, or *Monsieur Mingo de Moustrap*: when (poore flauge) he hath but dipt his bread in wilde Boares greace, and come home againe: or beene
bitten by the shinnes by a Wolfe: and faith, he hath adventured vppon the Barricadoes of Gurney; or Guingan, and fought with the yoong Guife hand to hand.

Some thinke to be counted rare Politicians and Statefmen, by beeing solitary: as who felt politician. The counter-should say, I am a wise man, a braue man, Secreta mea mihi: Frustra sapit, qui fibi non sapit: and there is no man worthy of my companie or friendship: when, although he goes ungartred like a malecontent Cutpurfle, and weares his hat ouer his eies like one of the cursed crue, yet cannot his stabbing dagger, or his nittie loue-locke, keepe him out of the Legend of fantastical cockfcombs. I pray ye, good Mounfier Diuell, take some order, that the streetes be not pestered with them so as they are. Is it not a pitiful thing that a fellow that eates not a good meales meat in a weeke, but beggereth his belly quite and cleane, to make his backe a certaine kind of a brokerly Gentleman: and nowe & then (once or twice in a Tearme) comes to the eighteene pence Ordenary, because hee would be seen amongft Caualiers and braue courtyers, liuing otherwise all the yeere long with salt Butter & Holland cheefe in his chamber, should take vppe a scornfull melancholy in his gate & countenance, couerse & talke, as though our common-welth were but a mockery of gouern-
ment, and our Maiestrates fooles, who wronged him in not looking into his deserts, not employing him in State matters, and that, if more regard were not had of him very shortly, the whole Realme should haue a misle of him, & he would go (I mary would he) where he should be more accounted off.

Is it not wonderfull ill-provided, I say, that this disdainfull companion is not made one of the fraternity of Foole, to talke before great States, with some olde mothe-eaten Polititian, of mending high waies, and leading Armies into Fraunce?

A young Heyre, or Cockney, that is his Mothers Darling, if hee haue playde the waste-

The prodigall good at the Innes of the Court, or about yoong Master.
London, and that neither his Students pension, nor his vnthriftes credite, will ferue to maintaine his Collidge of whores any longer, falles in a quarrelling humor with his fortune, because shee made him not King of the Indies, and swarees and flares, after ten in the hundreth, that nere a such Pesant, as his Father or brother, shall keepe him vnder: hee will to the sea, and teare the gold out of the Spaniards throats, but he will haue it, byrladie: And when he comes there, poore soule, hee lyes in brine, in Balift, and is lamentable sicke of the scurvies: his daintie fare is turned to a hungry feast of Dogs and Cats, or Haberdine and poore John, at the
moist, and which is lamentablest of all, that without Mustard.

As a mad Ruffion, on a time, being in danger of shipwrack by a tempest, and seeing all other at their vowes and praiers, that if it would please God, of his infinite goodnesse, to delyuer them out of that imminent danger, one woulde abjure this sinne whereunto he was adjeted: an other, make satisfaction for that vyolence he had committed: he, in a desperate lef, began thus to reconcile his soule to heauen.

O Lord, if it may seeme good to thee to deliver me from this feare of vntimely death, I vowe before thy Throne, and all thy starie Host, neuer to eate Haberdine more whilest I liue.

Well, so it fell out, that the Sky cleared and the tempest ceased, and this carelesse wretch, that made such a mockery of praier, readie to set foot a Land, cryed out: not without Mustard, good Lord, not without Mustard: as though it had been the greatest torment in the world, to haue eaten Haberdine without Mustard. But this by the way, what penance can be greater for Pride, than to let it swinge in his owne halter? Dulce bellum inexpertis: theris no man loues the smoake of his owne Countrey, that hath not been syngde in the flame of an other soyle. It is a pleasant thing, ouer a full pot, to read the fable of thirftic
Tantalius: but a hard matter to disgest salt meates at Sea, with stinking water.

Another misery of Pride it is, when men that haue good parts, and beare the name of deepe scholers, cannot be content to participate one faith with all Christendome, but, because they will get a name to their vaineglorie they will set their selfe-loue to study to inuent new sects of singularitie, thinking to liue when they are dead, by hauing theyr sects called after their names, as Donatists of Donatus, Arrians of Arrius, & a number more new faith-founders, that haue made England the exchange of Inouations, & almost asmuch confusion of Religion in euery Quarter, as there was of tongues at the building of the Tower of Babell. Whence, a number that fetch the Articles of their Beleefe out of Aristotle, & thinke of heauen and hell as the Heathen Philosophers, take occasion to deride our Ecclesiastical State, & all Ceremonies of Diuine worship, as bug-beares and scar-crowes, because (like Herodes fouldiers) we diuide Christs garment amongst vs in so many peeces, and of the vesture of saluation make some of vs Babies & apes coates, others straight trusses & Diuells breeches: some gally-gascoines, or a shipmans hose, like the Ana-baptists & adulterous Familists: others with the Martinists, a hood with two faces, to hide their
hypocrifie: and, to conclude, some, like the Barrowifts and Greenwodians, a garment full of the plague, which is not to be worn before it be new wafht.

Hence Atheists triumph and rejoyce, and talke as prophaneely of the Bible, as of Beuis of Hampton. I heare fay there be Mathematitions abroad that will prooue men before Adam, and they are harbour'd in high places, who will maintaine it to the death, that there are no diuells.

It is a fhame (senior Belzibub!) that you should suffer your felfe thus/to be tearmed a bastard, or not approue to your predestinate children, not only that they haue a father, but that you are hee that must owne them. These are but the suburbes of the finne we haue in hand: I muft describe to you a large cittie, wholly inhabited with this damnable enornitie.

In one place let me fhewe you a base Artificer, that hath no revenues to boaft on but a Needle in his bosome, as braue as any Pensioner or Nobleman.

In an other corner, Mistris Minx, a Marchants wife, that wil eate no cherries, forfooth, but when they are at twenty shillings a pound, that lookes as simperingly as if she were besmeard, & iets it as gingerly as if she
were dancing the Canaries: she is so finicall in her speach, as though she spake nothing but what she had first said over before in her Samplers, and the puling accent of her voyce is like a fained treble, or ones voyce that interprets to the puppets. What should I tell how squeamish she is in her dyet, what toyle she puts her poore seruants vnto, to make her looking glasses in the pauement? how she wil not goe into the fields, to cowre on the greene graffe, but shee must have a Coatch for her convoy: and spends halfe a day in pranking her selfe if she be inveted to anie strange place? Is not this the excess of pride, signior Sathan? Goe too, you are vnwise, if you make her not a chiefe Saint in your Calender.

The next obiect that encounters my eyes, in some such obscure vpstart gallants, as without desert or service, are raised from the plough to be checkmate with Princes: and these I can no better compare than to creatures that are bred Sine coitu, as crickets in chimnyes: to which I resemble poore Scullians, that, from turning spit in the chimney corner, are on the sodaine hoised vp from the Kitchin into the waiting chamber, or made Barons of the beanes, and Mar-quesies of the mary-boanes: some by corrupt water, as gnats, to which we may liken Brewers, that, by retayling filthy Thames water, come in few
yeres to be worth fortie or fiftie thousand pound: others by dead wine, as little flying wormes: and so the Vintners in like cafe: others by slime, as frogs, which may be alluded to Mother Bunches slime ale, that hath made her, & some other of her fil-pot family so wealthy: others by dirt, as worms: and so I know many gold-finers & hostlers come vp: some by hearbs, as cankers, & after the same fort our Apothecaries: others by ashes, as Scarabes: and how else get our Colliers the pence? Others from the putrified flesh of dead beasts, as Bees of Bulls, & butchers by fly-blowne beefe, wafpes of horses, and Hackney-men by felling their lame iades to hunts-men, for carrion.

Yet am I not against it, that these men by their mechanick trades should come to be sparage gentlemen & chuff-headed Burghomasters: sparagus a flower that never groweth but through mans dong.
as the feauen liberall Sciences & a good leg, will scarce get a paire of shooes and a Canuas-dublet.

These whelpes of the first litter of Gentilitie, these Exhalations, drawn vp to the heauen of honor from the dunghil of abieft fortune, have long been on horsebacke to come riding to your Diuelship: but, I know not how, like Saint George, they are alwaies mouited, but neuer mowe. Here they out-face Towne & countrey, & doo nothing but bandy factions with their betters. Their bigge limbes yeeld the Common-wealth no other seruice but idle sweate, & their heads, like rough hewn Gloabes, are fit for nothing but to be the block-houses for sleepe. Raynard, the Fox, may well beare vp his taile in the Lions denne, but when he comes abroad, he is afraide of euery dogge that barkes. What curre will not bawle, & be ready to flye in a mans face, when he is set on by his master, who, if hee bee not by to encourage him, he casts his taile betwixt his legges, & steales away like a sheepe byter. Vlisses was a tall man vnder Aiax shielde: but by himselfe hee would never adventure but in the night. Pride is never built but vpon some pillers: & let his supporters faile him never so little, you shall finde him very humble in ʃ dust. Wit oftentimes stands in stead of a chiefe arche to vnderprop it, in soldiers streght, in womē beauty.
Drudges, that haue no extraordinarie gifts of body nor of minde, filche themselues into some Noble mans service, either by bribes or by flattery, and, when they are there, they so labour it with cap & knee, and ply it with priuie whisperinges, that they wringe themselues into his good opinion ere he be a ware. Then, doo they vaunt themselues / ouer the common multitude, and are readie to braue anie man that stands by himselfe. Their Lords authoritie is as a rebater to beare vp the Peacockes taiie of their boasting, and any thing that is said or done to the vnhandsoming of their ambition is straight wreted to the name of treason. Thus do weedes grow vp whiles no man regards them, and the Ship of Fooles is arrived in the Hauen of Felicitie, whilest the Scoutes of Enuie contemne the attempts of any such small Barkes.

But beware you that be great mens Favorites: let not a feruile, insinuating flaue, creepe betwixt your legges into credit with your Lords: for pefants that come out of the colde of pouertie, once cherifht in the bofome of prosperitie, will straight forget that euer there was a winter of want, or who gaue them room to warme them. The son of a churle cannot choose but prooue ingrateful, like his Father. Trust not a villaine that hath beene miserable, and is sodainly grown happie.
Vertue ascendeth by degrees of desert into dignitie: gold & luft may lead a man a nearer way to promotion: but he that hath neither comelineffe nor coine to commend him, undoubtedly. As by carrying strydes over time by stratagems,* if of a moale-hil he grows to a mountaine in a moment. This is that which I urge: there is no friendship to be had with him that is resolute to doe or suffer any thing rather than to endure the destenie whereto he was borne: for he will not spare his owne Father or Brother, to make himself a Gentleman.

Fraunce, Italy, and Spaine, are all full of these false hearted Machiuillians; but properly Pride is the disease of the Spaniard, who is born a Bragart in his mothers womb: for, if he be but 17 years old, and hath come to the place where a Field was fought, (though halfe a yeare before) he then talks like one of the Giants that made warre against Heauen, and stands vpon his honor, as much as if he were one of Augustus Souldiers, of whom he first instituted the order of Heralds: and let a man sooth him in this vaine of kilcowe vanitie, you may commaund his hart out of his belly, to make you a rasher on the coales, if you will next your heart.

The Italian is a more cunning proud fellowe, and hides his humour farre cleanlier, and indeed seems
to take a pride in humilitie, & will profer a straunger
more courtesie than hee meanes to per-
forme. Hee hateth him deadly that takes
him at his word: as, for example, if vpon an occasion
of meeting, he request you to dinner or supper at
his house, / and that at the first or second intreatie
you promise to bee his guest, he will be the mortalit
enemy you haue: but if you deny him, he will
thinke you haue manners and good bringing vp, and
will loue you as his brother: marry, at the third or
fourth time you must not refuse him. Of al things
he counteth it a mighty disgrace to haue a man
paife juffling by him in haft on a narrowe causey,
and aske him no leave, which he neuer reuengeth
with leffe then a stab.

The Frenchman (not altered from his owne
nature) is wholle compaet of deceiuable Courtship,
and for the most part, loues none but
himselfe and his pleaure: yet though he
be the most Grand Signeur of them all, he will say,
A vosstre service & commandemente Mounseur, to the
meaneest vaflaile he meets. Hee thinkes he doth
great fauour to that gentleman, or follower of
his, to whom hee talks sitting on his close ftoole:
and with that fauour (I haue heard) the Princes
wonted to grace the Noble men of France: and
a great man of their Nation comming in time paft
ouer into England, and beeing here very honorably
received, he in requital of his admirable entertainment, on an evening going to the priuie, (as it were to honour extraordinarily our English Lords, appointed to attend upon him) gave one the candle, another his girdle, & another the paper: but they (not acquainted with this newe kinde of gracing) accompanying him to the priuie dore, set downe the trash, and so left him: which he, considering what inestimable kindnes he extended to them therein more than vsual, tooke very hainously.

The most grosse and fenceleffe proud dolts (in a difference from all these kinds) are the Danes, who stand so much vpon their unweldy burliboand fouliery, that they account of no man that hath not a battle Axe at his girdle to hough dogs with, or weares not a cockes feather in a thrumd hat like a cavalier: briefly, he is the best foole bragart vnder heauen. For besides nature hath lent him a flaberkin face, like one of the foure winds, and cheeks that sag like a womans dugs over his chin-bone, his apparel is so stuff vp with bladders of Taffatie, and his back like biefe stuff with Parfly, so drawne out with Ribands and deuifes, and blisterd with light farcenet bastings, that you would thinke him nothing but a swarme of Butterflies, if you saw him a far off.* Thus walkes hee vp and downe in his Maiesty, taking a yard of

The pride of the dane.
marks, look on his fingers, & you shall be sure to find half a dozen silver rings, worth three pence a piece, ground at every step, and stamps on the earth so terrible, as if he meant to knocke vppe a spirite, when (foule drunken bezzle) if an Englishman set his little finger to him, he fallles like a hogs-trough that is set on one end. Therefore, I am the more vehement against them, because they are an arrogant Asse-headed people, that naturally hate learning, and all them that loue it: yea, & for they would utterly roote it out from among them, they haue with-drawn al rewards from the Professors thereof. Not Barbary it selfe is halfe so barbarous as they are.

First, whereas the hope of honour maketh a Souldior in England: Byshopricks, Deanries, Prebendaries, and other priuate dignities, animate our Diuines to such excellence: the ciuill Lawyers haue their degrees & consiftories of honour by themselves, equal in place with Knights and Esquiers: the common Lawyers (suppose in the beginning they are but husbandmens sons) come in time to be chiefe Fathers of the land, and manie of them not the meanest of the Priuie Counsell.

There, the souldiour may fight himselfe out of his skinne, and do more exploits than hee hath doyts in his purse, before from a common Mercenary he come to be Corporal of the mould cheefe: or the Lieutenant
get a Captainship. None but the son of a Corporall must be a Corporall, nor any be Captaine, but the lawfull begotten of a Captaines body. Bishops, Deans, Prebendaries, why they know no such functions: a sort of ragged Ministers they haue, of whom they count as basely, as water-bearers. If any of the Noblemen refrain three howers in his life time from drinking, to study the Lawes, hee may perhaps haue a little more gouvernment put into his hands than an other: but, otherwise, Burgomasters & Gentlemen beare all the sway of both swordes, spiritual and temporall. It is death there for anie but a husbandman to marry a husbandmans daughter, or a Gentlemans childe to ioyne with any but the sonne of a Gentleman. Marry this, the king may well banish, but hee cannot put a Gentleman vnto death in any cause whatsoever, which makes them stand vppon it so proudly as they doe. For fashion sake some will put their children to schoole, but they set them not to it till they are foureteene yeere old: so that you shall see a great boy with a beard learne his A B C, and sit weeping vnnder the rod, when he is thirtie yeeres old.

I will not stand to inferre what a preiudice it is to the thrift of a florishing State, to make labor without hope. nought but the puddle water of penury to drinke:
to clippe the winges of a high towring Faulcon, who, wheras she wont in her fethered youthfull-nesse, to looke with an amiable eye on her gray breast, and her speckled side sayles, all finnoved with filuer quilles, and to dryue whole Armies of fearefull foules before her to her maifters Table; now she fits sadly on the ground, picking of wormes, mourning the crueltie of those vngentleman-like idle hands, that difmembreth the beauty of her trayne.

You all knowe that man (infomuch as hee is the Image of God) delighteth in honour and worhip, and all holy Writ warrantes that delight, so it bee not derogatory to any part of Gods owne worhip. Now, take away that delight, a discontented idle-nesse ouertakes him. For his hire, any handycraft man, be he Carpenter Joyner or Painter, will ploddingly do his day-labor: but to adde credit and fame to his workmanship, or to winne a maistery to himselfe aboue all other, hee will make a further assay in his trade than euer hitherto he did: hee will haue a thousand flourishes, which before he neuer thought vpon, and in one day ridde more out of hand, than earst he did in ten: So in Armes, so in Arts: if titles of fame and glory be proposed to forward minds, or that any foueraigntie (whose sweetnes they haue not yet felt) be set in likely view for them to fore too, they will make a ladder
of cord of the links of their braines, but they will fasten their handes, as wel as their eies, on the imaginatiue blisse, which they already enjoy by admiration. Experience reproves me for a foole, for delating on so manifest a cafe.

The Danes are burften-bellied fots, that are to be confused with nothing but Tankards or quart pots, and Ouid might as wel haue read his verses to the Getes that understood him not, as a man talke reason to them that haue no eares but their mouths, nor sense but of that which they swallow downe their throats.

And that sense often times maketh them senseless.

God so loue me, as I loue the quicke-witted Italians, and therefore loue them the more, because they mortally detest this surley swinish Generation.

I need not fetch colours from other countries to paint the vglie viface of Pride, since her picture is set forth in so many painted faces here at home. What drugs, what scourgeries, what oiles, what waters, what oynments, doe our curious Dames vfe to inlarge our withered* beauties. Their lips are as lauishly red, as if they vfed to kiss an okerman euery morning, and their cheeks fuger-candied & cherry bluift so sweetly after the colour* of a newe Lord Mayors postes, as if the pageant of their wedlocke holiday

* Withered flowers need much watering.

* And will indulge all wethers as wel as they. They may well be called counterfautes, since the beauty they imitate is counterfeited.
were harde at the doore: so/that if a Painter were
to drawe any of their counterfets on a Table, he
needes no more but wet his pencill, and dab it on
their cheeckes, and he shall haue vermillion
and white enough to furnifh out his
worke, though he leaue his tar-boxe
at home behinde him. Wise was that
fin-washing Poet that made the Ballet
of Blue flarch and poaking flíck, for
indeed the lawne of licentiousnesse hath
confumed all the wheate of hospitallitie.
It is said, Laurence Lucifer, that you
went vp and downe London crying there
like a lanterne and candle man. I meruaile no
Laundresse would giue you the wafhing and flarch-
ing of your face for your labour, for God knowes it
is as blacke as the blacke Prince.

It is suspected you haue been a great tobacco-
taker* in your youth, which caufeth it
to come so to passe: but Dame Nature,
your nurse, was partly in fault, else she
might haue remedied it. *She should haue
noynted your face ouer night with Lac virginis,
which, baking vpon it in bed till the
morning, she might haue pild off the
scale like the skin of a custard, and
making a posset of vergis mixt with the oyle of
Tartary and Camphire, and bathde it in it a

* Marke these
two letter-
leaping Meta-
phors, good
people. So saleth the
learned Poli-
histor Rime-
rus, in his
first booke,
first page, &
first line of
his Ballad of
blew flarch
and poaking
stickes.

* The diuell a
great Tobacco
taker.

* A medicine
to make the
diuel faire.
quarter of an houre, and you had been as faire as the floure of the frying pan. I warrant, we haue old hackfters in this great Grandmother of Corporations, Madame Troyouant, that haue not backbited anie of their neighbours with the tooth of enuy this twentie yeare, in the wrinckles of whose face, yee may hide false dice, and play at cherry pit in the dint of their cheekes: yet these aged mothers of iniquitie will haue their deformities newe plaißtered ouer, & weare nosegayes of yeelow haire on their furious foreheads, when age hath written, Hoe God, be here, on their bald burnt parchment pates. Pifh, pifh, what talke you of old age or balde pates? men & women that haue gone vnder the South pole,* must lay off their furde night-caps in spight of their teeth, & become yeomen of the Vineger bottle: a close periwig hides al the finnes of an old whore-master; but Cucullus non facit Monachum,* tis not their newe bonnets will keepe them from the old boan-ach. Ware when a mans finnes are written on his ey-browes, and that there is not a haire bredth betwixt them and the falling sicknes. The times are dangerous, & this is an yron age, or rather no yron age, for swords & bucklers goe to pawne a pace in Long lane: but a tinne age: for tinne and pewter are
more esteemed than Latin. You that be wife, despise it, abhorre it, neglect it, for what should a / man care for gold that cannot get it.

An Antiquarie is an honest man, for he had rather scrape a piece of copper out of the durt, than a crowne out of Ploiden's standish. I know manie wife Gentlemen of this mufty vocation, who out of loue with the times wherein they liue, fall a retailing of Alexanders stirrops, because (in veritie) there is not such a strong piece of stretching leather made now adayes, nor yron so well tempred for anie money. They will blow their nofe in a box, and say it is the fpettle that Diogenes fp et in ones face: who beeing invited to dinner to his house, that was neat and braue in all points as might be deuised, & the gruting Dog, somewhat troubled with the rheume (by meanes of his long fasting and staying for dinner more than wont), set full in his Hoftes face: and being askt the reafon of it, said, it was the foulef place he could spie out in all his house. Let their Miftres (or some other woman) giue them a fether of her fanne for a favor, & if one ask them what it is? they make answer, a plume of the Phenix, whereof there is but one in all the whole world. A thousand guegawes and toyes haue they in their chambers, which they heape vp together, with infinite ex-
pence, and are made beleue of them that sel them, that they are rare & pretious things, when they haue gathered them vpon some dunghill, or rakte them out of the kennell by chaunce. I know one fold an old rope with foure knots on it for foure pound, in that he gaue it out, it was the length and breeth of Christs Tombe. Let a Tinker take a peece of brasse worth a halfpeny, and set strange famps on it, & I warrant he may make it more worth to him of some fantafficall foole, than all the kettels that euer he mended in his life. This is the diseafe of our newfangled humorists, that know not what to doo with their welth. It argueth a verie rusty wit, so to doate on worme-eaten Elde.

Out vpon it, how long is Pride a dressing her selfe? Enuie, awake, for thou must appeare before Nicalao Maleuolo, great Muster-master of hell. Marke you this flie mate, how smoothly hee lookes? The Poets were ill aduised that fained him to be a leane, gag-toothd Beldam, with hollow eyes, pale cheeks, and snakie haire: for he is not onely a man, but a iolly luftie olde Gentleman, that will winke, and laugh, and ieast driely, as if he were the honestest of a thousand: and I warrant you shall not heare a foule word come from him in a yeare. I will not contradict it, but the Dog may worry a sheepe
in the dark, and thrust his necke into the collar of clemencie & pitie when he hath done: as who shoulde saie, God forgiue him, hee was a sleepe in the shambles, when the innocent was done to death. But openly, Enuie sets a ciuil, fatherly countenaunce vpon it, & hath not so much as a drop of bloud in his face, to attaint him of murther. I thought it expedient, in this my Supplication, to place it next to Pride: for it is his adopted sone: And hence comes it, that proud men repine at others prosperitie, and greeue that any should be great but themselves. *Meus cujusque, is est quisque;* it is a Proverbe that is as hoarie as Dutch-butter. If a man wil goe to the diuell, he may go to the diuel: there are a thousand juggling tricks to be vised at hey passe, come aloft: and the world hath cords enough to truffle vp a calfe that stands in ones way. Enuie is a Crocodile that weeps when he kils, & fightes with none but he feeds on. This is the nature of this quickfighted monster, hee wil endure any paines to endamage another: waft his body with vndertaking exploits that would require ten mens strengthes, rather than any should get a penny but himselfe, bleare his eyes to stand in his neighbors light, and to conclude, like Atlas vnderproppe heauen, rather than any should be in heauen that he likte not of, or come vnito heauen by any other meanes but by him.
You goodman wandrer about the world, how doe ye spende your time, that you do not rid vs of these pestilent members? You are vnworthy to haue an office, if you can execute it no better. Behold another enemy of mankind, besides thy felfe, exalted in the South, Philip of Spaine: who not contented to be the God of gold, and chiefeft commander of content that Europe affords, but now he doth nothing but thirst after humane bloud, when his foot is on the threshold of the graue: and as a wolfe, beeing about to deuoure a horfe, doth balift his belly with earth, that he may hang the heavier vppon him, and then forcibly flies in his face, neuer leauing his hold till he hath eaten him vp: so this woluifh vnnatural vfurper, being about to deuoure all Christendome by invasion, doth cramme his treasures with Indian earth to make his malice more forcible, and then flyes in the bosome of France & Belgia, neuer withdrawing his forces (as the Wolfe his faftning) till he hath deuoured their welfare, & made the war-wafted carcafes of both kingdoms a pray for his tyrannie. Onely poore England giues him bread for his cake, and holds him out at the arms end. His Armados (that like a high wood, ouer-shadowed the shrubbes of our /low ships) fled from the breath of our Cannons, as vapors before the Sunne, or as the
Elephant flies from the Ramme, or the Sea-whale from the noyse of parched bones. The winds, envyng that the aire should be dimmed with such a Chaos of wodden clowds, raised vp high bulwarks of bellowing waues, where Death shotte at their disordered Naue: and the Rocks with their over-hanging iawes, eat vp all the fragments of oake that they left. So perisht our foes, so the Heauens did fight for vs. Præterit Hippomenes, resonant spectacula plausis.

I do not doubt (Doctor Diuell) but you were present in this action, or passion rather, and helpt to bore holes in ships to make them sinke faster; and rence out Galley-foifts with salt water, that sinke like fistie barrels with their Masters feare. It will be a good while ere you do as much for the King, as you did for his subiects. I would haue ye perfwade an Armie of goutie Vsurers to goe to Sea vpon a boon voyage: trie if you can tempt Enuy to embarke himself in the mal-aduenture, and leaue troubling the streame, that Poets & good fellowes may drinke, & Souldiers sing Placebo, that haue murmured so long at the waters of strife.

But that wil neuer bee: for as long as Pride, Riot, and Whoredome are the companions of yoong Courtiers, they wil alwayes bee hungry, and ready to bite at euery Dog that hath a boane
giuen him beside themselfes. If so, what secret grudge and rancour raignes amongst them, one being ready to dispaire of himself, if he see \( y \)
Prince but giue his fellow a faire looke, or to die for griefe if he be put down in brauery never so little. Yet this cuftome haue our false harts fetcht from other countries, that they wil sweare & protest loue, where they hate deadly, and smile on him most kindly, whose subuerfion in soule they haue vowed. \( Fraus sublimi regnat in aula. \) Tis rare to finde a true frend in Kings Pallaces: either thou must be so miserable that thou fall into the hands of scornful pitie, or thou canst not escape the stinging of envy. In one thought, assemble the famous men of all ages, and tel me which of them all fate in the sunshine of his soueraignes grace, or wrest great of low beginnings, but he was spite-blasted, heaued at, & ill spoken of: and that of those that bare them most countenance. But were envy nought but words, it might seeme to be onely womens sinne: but it hath a lewd mate hanging on his sleeue, called Murther, a sterne fellowe, that (like a \( \text{Murder, the companion of Enui} \)) aymeth all at the heart: hee hath more shapes than \( Proteus \), and will shifte himselfe, vpon any occasion of reuenge-ment, into a man's dish, his drinke, his apparell, his rings, his stirrops, his nosegay.
O Italie, the Academie of manslaughter, the sporting place of murther, the Apothecary-shop of poiison for all Nations: how many kind of weapons hast thou invented for malice? Suppose I love a man's wife, whose husband yet liues, and cannot enjoy her for his jealous overlooking: Phisicke, or rather, the art of murther, (as it may be vsed) will lend one a Medicine, which shal make him away, in the nature of that disease hee is most subject to, whether in the space of a yeare, a moneth, halfe a yeere, or what tract of time you will, more or lesse.

In Rome the Papall Chayre is wast, every fyeere at the furthest, with this oyle of Aconitum. I pray God, the King of Spayne feasted not our holy father Sextus, that was laft, with such conferue of Henbane: for it was credibly reported hee loued him not, and this, that is now, is a God made with his owne hands: as it may appeare by the Pasquil that was set vp of him, in manner of a note, presently after his election, Sol. Re. Me. Fa. that is to say, Solus Rex me facit; onely the K. of Spaine made me Pope. I am no Chronicler from our owne Countrey, but if probable suspition might bee heard vpon his oath, I thinke some mens foules would bee canonized for Martyrs, that on the earth did fway it as Monarchies.
Is it your will and pleasure (noble Lants-graufe of Lymbo) to let vs haue leFFE carouFing to your health in poison, fewer vnder-hand conspirings, or open quarrels executed onely in wordes, as they are in the worlde now a dayes: as if men will needs caroufe, conspire, and quarrell, that they may make Ruffians hall of Hell: and there bandy balls of Brimstone at one another's head, and not trouble our peaceable Paradife with their prouiate hurliburlies about strumpets, where no weapon (as in Adams Paradife) fhould be named: but onely the Angell of prouidence fhall with a fiery fword at the gate, to keep out our enemies.

A Perturbation of mind (like vnto Enuy) is Wrath, which looketh farre lower than the former: For, whereas Enuie cannot be faide to bee but in respect of our Superiours, Wrath respecteth no degrees nor persons, but is equally armed against all that offende him. / A harebraind little Dwarfe it is, with a swarth vifage, that hath his hart at his tongues end, if he be contraride, and will be sure to do no right nor take no wrong. If hee bee a Iudge or a Iustice (as sometimes the Lyon comes to giue sentence against the Lamb), then he sweares by nothing but by Saint Tyborne, & makes Newgate a Noune Subftantiuie, whereto
all his other words are but Adieutues.  

Lightly, hee is an olde man: (for those yeares are most wayward and teatish) yet be he never so old or so froward, since Auarice likewise is a fellow vice of those fraile yeares, we must set one extreame to strieue with another, and alay the anger of oppression by the sweet incense of a newe purse of angels: or the doting Planet may haue such predominance in these wicked Elders of Israel, that, if you send your wife, or some other female, to plead for you, she may get your pardon uppon promife of better acquaintance. But whist, these are the workes of darkness, and may not be talkt of in the day time: Fury is a heate or fire, & must bee quencht with maides water.

Amongst other cholericke wife Iuftices, he was one, that hauing a play presented before him and his Township by Tarlton and the rest of his fellowes, her Maiesties seruants, and they were now entring into their first merriment (as they call it), the people began exceedingly to laugh, when Tarlton first peeped out his head. Whereat the Iuftice, not a little moued, and seeing with his beckes and nods, hee could not make them ceafe, he went with his staffe, & beat them round about vnmercifully on the bare pates, in that they, being but Farmers and poore countrey hyndes, would presume to laugh at the Queenes
men, & make no more account of her cloath in his presence.

The causes conducting vnto wrath are as diuers as the actions of a mans life. Some will take on like a mad man, if they see a pigge come to the table. _Sotericus_, the Surgeon, was cholericke at fight of Sturgeon. The Irishman will draw his dagger, and bee ready to kill & slay, if one breake winde in his company: and so some of our English men, that be Souldiers, if one giue them the lye: but these are light matters, whereof _Pierce_ complaineth not.

Be aduertisèd, Master _Os fatidum_, Bedle of the Blackesmithes, that Lawyers cannot deuise which way in the world to begge, they are so troubled with brabblements and futes euery Tearme, of Yeomen and Gentlemen that fall out for nothing. If _John a Nokes_ his henne doo but leap into _Elizabeth de Gappes_ close, shee will neuer leaue to haunt her husband, till he bring it to a _Nisi prius_. One while, the Parfon sueth the parishioner for bringing home his tythes: another while, the Parishioner sueth the Parson for not taking away his Tythes in time.

I heard a tale of a Butcher, who driuing two Calues ouer a Common, that were coupled together by the neckes with an Oken With, in the way where they should
passe, there lay a poore, leane Mare, with a
galde backe: to whom they comming (as chance
fell out), one of one side, and the other of the
other, smelling on her, (as their manner is) the
midst of the With that was betwixt their necks
rubd her and grated her on the fore backe, that
shee started and rose vp, and hung them both on
her backe as a beame: which, being but a rough
plaifter to her raw vlcer, she ran away with them
(as she were frantick) into the Fens, where the
Butcher could not follow them, and drownde both
her selfe and them in a Quagmyre. Now, the
owner of the Mare is in law with the Butcher
for the losse of his Mare, and the Butcher enter-
changably endites him for his Calues. I pray ye,
Timothy Tempter, be an Arbitrator betwixt them,
& couple them both by the neckes, (as the Calues
were) and carry them to Hel on your backe, and
then, I hope, they wyll be quiet.

The chiefe spur vnto wrath is Drunkennes,
which, as the touch of an Ashen bough, causeth
a gidinesse in the Vipers head, and the Batte,
lightly strooke with the leafe of a Tree, loseth his
remembrance: so they, being but lightly sprinckled
with the iuyce of the Hop, become fenceleffe, and
haue their reason strooken blind, as soone as euer
the Cup scaleth the Fortresse of their Nose. Then
run their words at random, like a dog that hath
loft his master, and are vppe with this man & that man, & generally inuey against all me: but those that keep a wet corner for a friend, and will not thinke fcorne to drinke with a good fellowe and a Souldiour: & so long do they praftife this vaine on their Ale-bench, that when they are fober, they cannot leave it. There be those that get their living all the yeere long, by nothing but rayling.

Not farre from Chester, I knewe an odde foule-mouthde knaue, called Charles the Fryer, that had a face so parboyled with mens spitting on it, and a backe so often knighted in Bridewell, that it was im-possible for any shame or punishment to terrifie him from ill speaking. Noblemen hee would liken to more vgly things than himselfe: some /to Alter my moft hearty commendations, with a dash ouer the head: others to guilded chines of beepe, or a shoomaker sweating, when he puls on a shoo: another to an old verse in Cato, Ad consilium ne accesseris, antequam voceris: another to a Spanish Codpiffe: another, that his face was not yet finisht, with fuch like innumerable absurd allusions: yea, what was he in the Court but hee had a comparison instead of a Capsace to put him in. Vpon a time, being challengde at his owne weapon in a private Chamber, by a great personage, (rayling, I meane) he so far outstript him in villainous words, and
ouer-bandied him in bitter tearms, that the name of sport could not persuade him patience, or containe his furie in any degrees of icaft, but needs he must wreake himselfe vpon him: neyther would a comon reuenge suffife him, his displeasure was so infinite, (and it may be, common reuenges he tooke before, as far as the whipcord would stretch, vpon like prouokements) wherefore he caufed his men to take him, and bricke him vp in a narrowe chimney, that was neque major neque minor corpore locato: where he fed him for fifteene daies with bread and water through a hole, letting him sleepe standing if he would, for lye or fit he could not, and then he let him out to see if he could learne to rule his tongue any better.

It is a disparagement to thofe that haue any true spark of Gentilitie, to be noted of the whole world fo to delight in detracting, that they should keepe a venemous toothde Curre, and feede him with the crums that fall from his table, to do nothing but bite euery one by the fliins that passe by. If they will needs be merrie, let them haue a foole, and not a knaue, to disport them, and feeke fome other to beftow their almes on, than fuch an impudent begger.

As there be thofe that rayle at all men, fo there be them that rayle at all Arts, as Cornelius Agrippa, De vanitate scientiarum, and a Treatife that I haue
seene in dispraise of learning, where hee faith, it is
the corrupter of the simple, the schoolemafter of
sin, the storehouse of trecherie, the reuier of
vices, and mother of cowardize: alledgeing many
examples, how there was neuer man egregiously
euill but hee was a Scholler: that when the vfe
of letters was first inuented, the Golden World
ceased, Facinusque inuasit mortales: how studie
doeth effeminate a man, dimme his sight, weaken
his braine, and ingender a thousand diseaues.
Small learning would serue to confute so manifest
a scandale, and I imagine all men, like my selfe, so
vnmoveable / resolued of the excellencie thereof,
that I will not, by the vnderpropping of confuta-
tion, seeme to giue the idle-witted aduerfary so
much encouragement, as he should furmize his
superficiall arguments had shaken the foundation
of it: against which he could neuer haue lifted
his pen if her selfe had not helpt him to hurt
herselfe.

With the enemies of Poetry, I care not if I haue
a bout, and those are they that tearme
our best Writers but babling Ballat-
makers, holding them fantastical fooles
that haue wit, but cannot tell how to vse it. I
my selfe, haue beene so cenfured among some
dul-headed diuines: * who deeme it no * Absit arro-
gantia, that
more cunning to write an esquisite
Poem, than to preach pure *Caluin*, or distill the juice of a Commentary in a quarter Sermon. Prooue it when you will, you flowe spirited Saturnists, that haue nothing but the pilfries of your penne, to pollishe an exhortation withall: no eloquence but Tautologies, to tie the eares of your Auditory vnto you; no inuention but heere is to be noted, I stole this note out of *Bexa* or *Marlorat*: no wit to moue, no passion to vrge, but onely an ordinary forme of preaching, blowen vp by vse of often hearing and speaking; and you shal finde there goes more exquisite paines and purtie of wit, to the writing of one such rare Poem as *Rosamond*, than to a hundred of your dunsticall Sermons.*

Should we (as you) borrow all out of others, and gather nothing of our selues, our names would be baffuld on euerie Booke-fellers stall, and not a Chandlers Mustard-pot but would wipe his mouth with our waft paper. Newe Herrings, new, we must cry, every time we make our selues publique, or else we shall be christend with a hundred new titles of Idiotifme. Nor is Poetry an Art whereof there is no vse in a mans whole life, but to describe discontented thoughts and youthfull desires: for there is no study, but it dooth illustrate & beau-
tie. How admirably shine those Diuines aboue the common mediocrity, that haue tafted the sweet springs of Pernassus?

Silver-tongu'd Smith, whose well tun'd stile hath made thy death the generall teares of the Muses, queintlie could'st thou devised heavenly Ditties to Apolloes Lute, & teach stately verse to trip it as smoothly as if Ouid & thou had but one soule. Hence along did it proceede, that thou wert such a plausible pulpit man: before thou entred'st into the wonderfull waies of Theologie, thou refined'st, prepared'st, and purifid'est thy wings with sweete Poetrie. If a simple mens censure may be admitted to speake in such an open Theater of Opinions, I neuer saw abundant reading better mixt with delight, or sentences which no man can challenge of prophanse affectionation, sounding more melodious to the eare, or piercing more deepe to the heart.

To them that demaund, what fruietes the Poets of our time bring forth, or wherein they are able to prooue themselves necessarie to the state? Thus I answere. First and formost, they haue cleansed our language from barbarisme, and made the vulgar sort, here in London, (which is the fountaine whose riuers owne round about England) to aspire to a richer puritie of speach, than is communicated with the Comminalty of any
Nation vnder heauen. The vertuous by their praises they encourage to be more vertuous, to vicious men they are as infernall hags, to haunt their ghosts with eternall infamie after death. The Souldier, in hope to haue his high deeds celebrated by their pens, despiseth a whole Armie of perills, and aetheth wonders exceeding all humane conicecture. Thos that care neither for God nor the diuell, by their quills are kept in awe.

Plin. lib. 3. *Multi famam, (faith one) pauci scientiam verentur.*

Let God see what he will, they would be loath to haue the shame of the world. What age wil not prayse immortal Sir Phillip Sidney, whome noble Salustius (that thrice finguler french Poet) hath famoufes: together with Sir Nicholas Bacon, lord keeper, & merry Sir Thomas Moore, for the chiefe pillers of our engliſh speech. Not so much but Chaucers hoft, Baly in Southwarke, and his wife of Bath, he keeps such a fyrre with, in his Canterbury tales, shalbe talkt of whilst the Bath is vised, or there be euery a bad house in Southwarke.

Gentles, it is not your lay Chronigraphers that write of nothing but of Mayors and Sheriefs, and the deare yeere, and the great Froft, that can endowe your names with neuer dated glory: for they want the wings
of choiſe words to fly to heauen, which we haue: they cannot sweeten a discourse, or wreft admiration from men reading, as we can: reporting the meanest accident. Poetry is the hunny of all flowers, the quinteflence of all Sciences, the Marrowe of Witte, and the very Phraſe of Angels: how much better is it then to haue an eligant Lawier to plead ones cauſe, than a flutting Townsman, that lofeth himſelfe in his tale, and dooth nothing but make legs: so much is it better for a Nobleman, or Gentleman, to haue his honours story related, and his deedes emblazond, by a Poet than a Citizen.

Alas poor latinleffe Authors, they are fo simple, they knowe not what they doe; they no sooner spy a new Ballad, and his name to it that com‐ pilde it: but they put him in for one of the learned men of our time. I maruell how the Masterleffe men, that fet vp their bills in Paules for services, and ſuch as paffe vp their papers on euery poſt, for Arithmetique and writing Schooles, ſcape eternitie amongſt them; I beleue both they and the Knight Marshals men, that naile vp mandates at the court gat[e], for annoying the Pallace with filth or making water, if they fet their names to the writing, will shortly make vp the number of the learned men of our time, and be as famous as the reſt. For my part, I do
challenge no praise of learning to my selfe, yet haue I worn a gowne in the Vniuersitie, and so hath *caret tempus non habet moribus*: but this I dare presume, that, if any *Mecenas* binde mee to him by his bounty, or extend some round liberalitie to mee worth the speaking of, I will doe him as much honour as any Poet of my beardlesse yeeres shall in *England*. Not that I am so confident what I can doe, but that I attribute so much to my thankfull mind aboue others, which I am perswaded would enable me to worke myracles.

On the contrary side, if I bee euill intreated, or sent away / with a Flea in mine eare, let him looke that I will rayle on him soundly: not for an houre or a day, whiles the injury is fresh in my memory: but in some elaborate, pollisshed Poem, which I will leaue to the world when I am dead, to be a living Image to all ages, of his beggerly parsimony and ignoble illiberalitie: and let him not (what soeuer he be) measure the weight of my words by this booke, where I write *Quicquid in buccam venerit*, as faft as my hand can trot: but I haue tearmes (if I be vext) laid in steepe in *Aqua fortis*, and Gunpowder, that shall rattle through the Skyes, and make an Earthquake in a pefants eares. Put cafe (since I am not yet out of the Theame of
Wrath) that some tired Jade belonging to the Press, whome I neuer wronged in my life; hath named me expressly in print (as I will not do him), and accused me of want of learning, vpbraiding me for reuiving, in an epiftle of mine, the reuerend memory of Sir Thomas Moore, Sir John Cheeke, Doctor Watson, Doctor Haddon, Doctor Carre, Maifter Afcham, as if they were no meate but for his Masterships mouth, or none but some fuch, as the fonne of a ropemaker, were worthy to mention them. To shewe how I can rayle, thus would I begin to rayle on him. Thou that hadft thy hood turnd ouer thy eares, when thou wert a Batchelor, for abusing of Aristotle, and fetting him vp on the Schoole gates, painted with Af tes eares on his head: is it any difcredit for me, thou great baboune, thou Pigmie Braggart, thou Pampheter of nothing but peans, to bee cenfured by thee, that haft scorned the Prince of Philosophers; thou, that in thy Dialogues foldft Hunny for a halpenie, and the choyceft Writers ex- [t]ant for cues a piece, that cam'ft to the Logicke Schooles when thou wert a Fresh-man, and writft phraſes; off with thy gowne and vntruffe, for I meane to laff thee mightily. Thou haft a Brother, haft thou
not, student in Almanackes? Go to, Ile stand to it, he fatherd one of thy bastards, (a booke I meane) which, being of thy begetting, was set forth vnder his name.

Gentlemen, I am sure you haue hearde of a ridiculous Affe, that many yeares since told lyes by the great, & wrote an absurd astrologicaall Discourse of the terrible Coniunction of Saturne and Jupiter, wherein (as if hee had latelie caft the Heauens water, or beene at the anatomiizing of the Skies intrailes in Surgeons hall) hee prophecieth of such strange wonders to ensue from stars distemperature, & the vniuerfal adultry of Planets, as none but he, that is Bawd to those celestiall bodies, could euer discry. What expectation there was of it both in towne & country, the amazement of those times may testifie: and the rather, because he pawned his credit vpon it, in these expresse tearmes: **If these things fall not out in every poynct as I haue wrote, let mee for euer hereafter loose the credit of my Astronomie.** Well, so it happend, that he happend not to be a man of his word: his Astronomie broke his day with his creditors, and Saturne and Jupiter prou'd honefter men than all the World tooke them for: wherevpon, the poore Prognosticator was ready to runne himselfe through with his Iacob's Staffe,
caft himselfe headlong from the top of a Globe, (as a mountaine) and breake his necke. The whole Vniuersitie hyft at him, Tarlton at the Theator made iefts of him, and Elderton consumed his ale-crammed nose to nothing, in bear-bayting him with whole bundels of ballets. Would you, in likely reafon, geffe it were possible for anie shame-fwolne toad to haue the spet-proofe face to out liue this disgrace? It is, deare brethren, Vivit, imo vivit; and which is more, he is a Vicar.

Poor Slaue, I pitie thee that thou hadft no more grace but to come in my way. Why, could not you haue fate quyet at home, and writ Catechifmes, but you must be comparing me to Martin? and exlayme againft me for reckoning vp the high Schollers of worthie memorie? Jupiter ingenii præbet sua numina vatum, faith Ouid; Seque celebrari quolibet ore finit. Which, if it be so, I hope I am Aliquis, & those men, quos honoris caufa nominavi, are not greater than Gods. Methinks, I see thee stand quiuering & quaking, and euen now lift vp thy hands to heauen, as thanking God my choler/is somewhat affwag’d: but thou art deccieu’d, for howeuer I let fall my ftile a little, to talk in reafon with thee that haft none, I do not meane to let thee scape fo.

Thou haft wronged one for my fake, (whome for the name I muft loue) T. N., the Maifter
Butler of Pembrooke Hall, a farre better Scholler than thy selfe, (in my judgement) and one that sheweth more discretion and government in setting vp a sife of Bread, than thou in all thy whole booke. Why man, thinke no scorne of him, for he hath held thee vp a hundred times, whiles the Deane hath giuen thee correction, and thou hast capd and kneed him (when thou wert hungry) for a chipping. But thats nothing, for hadst thou never beene beholding to him, nor holden vp by him, he hath a Beard that is a better Gentlemā than all thy whole body, and a graue countenance, like Cato, able to make thee run out of thy wits for feare, if he looke sternly vpon thee. I haue reade ouer thy Sheepish discourse of the Lambe of God and his enemies, and entreated my patience to bee good to thee whilst I read it: but for al that I could doe with myselfe, (as I am sure I may doe as much as an other man) I could not refraine, but bequeath it to the Priuie, leafe by leafe as I read it, it was so vgly, dorbellicall, and lamish. Monstrous, monstrous, and palpable, not to be spoken of in a Christian Congregation: thou haft skumd ouer the Schoole men, and of the froth of their folly made a dish of diuinitie Brewesse, which the dogges will not eate. If the Printer haue any great dealings with thee, he were beft get a priuileledge betimes, _Ad imprimendā solum_, forbidding all
other to fell waste paper but himselfe, or else he will be in a wofull taking. The Lambe of God make thee a wiser Bell-weather then thou art, for else I doubt thou wilt be driuen to leaue all, and fal to thy fathers occupation, which is, to goe and make a rope to hang thy selfe. Neque enim Lex aequior ualla est, quam necis artifices arte perire sua: and so I leaue thee til a better opportunity, to be tormented world without end, of our Poets and Writers about London, whome thou haft called piperly Make-plaies / and Make-bates: not doubting but he also whom thou tearmest the vayn Pap-hatchet, wil haue a flurt at thee one day: all ioytly driuing thee to this issue, that thou shalt bee constrained to goe to the chiefe Beame of thy Benefice, and there beginning a lamettable speech with cur scripsi, cur perii, end with pravum prava decent, iuvat inconcessa voluptas, and with a trice trulle vp thy life in the string of thy Sancebell. So be it, pray Penn, Incke, and paper, on their knees, that they may not be troubled with thee any more.

Redeo ad vos, mei Auditores, haue I not a indifferent pretty veine in spurgalling an Asse? if you knew how extemporall it were at this instant, and with what haft it is writ, you would say so. But I would not haue you thinke, that al this that is set downe heere, is in good earneft, for then you
goe by S. Gyles, the wrong way to Westminster: but onely to shew how for a neede I could rayle, if I were throughly fyred. So ho, Honiger Hammon: where are you al thys while, I cannot be acquainted with you? Tell me, what doe you thinke of the case? am I subiect to the sinne of Wrath I write againft, or no, in whetting my penne on this block? I know you would faine haue it so, but it shal not choose but be otherwise for this once. Come on: let vs turne ouer a new leafe, and heare what Gluttony can say for her selfe, for Wrath hath fpent his poyson, and full platters doe well after extreame purging.

The Romayne Emperours that succeeded Augustus were exceedingly giuen to this hорrible vice, whereof some of them would feede on nothing but the tongues of Phefants and Nightingales: other, would spend as much at one banquet, as a Kings reuuenues came too in a yeare: whose excessie I would decyphere at large, but that a new Laureat hath fau’d me the labor: who, for a man that stands vpon paines & not wit, hath performd as much, as anie Storie dresser may doe, that sets a new English nap on an olde Latine Apothege. It is enough for me to licke dishes here at home, though I feede not mine eyes at anie of the Ro/mane feafts. Much good doo it you, Master Dines, here in
London: for you are he my pen meanes to dine withall. Miserere mei, what a fat churle it is? Why, he hath a belly as big as the round Church in Cambridge, a face as huge as the whole bodie of a base viall, and legs that, if they were hollow, a man might keepe a mill in either of them. Experto crede Roberto, there is no maft like a Marchaunts table. Bonâ fide, it is a great misture, that we haue not men swine as well as beasts, for then we should haue porke that hath no more bones than a pudding, and a fide of bacon that you might lay vnnder your head in stead of a bolster.

It is not for nothing that other Countries, whome wee vpbraied with Drunkenneffe, call vs burften-bellied Gluttons: for we make our greedie paunches powdring tubs of beefe, and eate more meat at one meale, than the Spaniard or Italian in a month. Good thriftie men, they drawe out a dinner with fallets, like a Swart-rutters fute, and make Madona Nature their beft Caterer. We muft haue our Tables furniht like Poultrers fballs, or as though we were to victuall Noahs Arke againe, (wherein there was al forts of liuing creatures that euer were) or els the good-wife wil not open her mouth to bid one welcome. A stranger that should come to one of our Magnificoes houfls, when dinner were fet on
the board, and he not yet set, would think the
goodman of the house were a Haberdasher of
Wilde-fowle, or a Merchant venturer of daintie
meate, that sells commodities of good cheere by
the great, and hath Factors in Arabia, Turkey,
Egypt, and Barbarie, to provide him of strange
Birdes, China mustard, and odd patterns to make
Custards by.

Lord, what a coyle haue we, with this Course
and that Course, remouing this dish higher, setting
another lower, and taking away the third. A
Generall might in lesse space remoue his Camp,
than they stand disposing of their Gluttonie. And
whereunto tends all this gurmandise, but to give
sleepe grosse humors to feede on, to corrupt the
braine, and make it vnapt and vnweildie for anie
thing?

The / Romane Censors, if they lighted vpon a
fat corpulent man, they straight tooke away his
horse, and constrained him to goe a foote: posi-
tiuely concluding his carkasse was so pufh vp with
gluttoney or idlenesse. If wee had such horse-
takers amongst vs, and that surfit-s wolne Charles,
who now ride on their foot-cloathes, might bee
constrained to carry their flesh budgets from place
to place on foote, the price of velvet and cloath
would fall with their bellies, and the gentle craft
(alias the red herrings kinsmen) get more, &
drinke leffe. Plenus venter nil agit libenter, & plures gula occidit quam gladius. It is as desperate a peece of seruice to sleep vpon a full stomacke, as it is to serue in face of the bullet: a man is but his breath, and that may as wel be ftopt by putting too much in his mouth at once, as rûning on the mouth of the Cannon. That is verified of vs, which Horace writes of an outrageous eater in his time, Quicquid quæsierat ventri donabat avaro, Whatsoever he could rap or rend, he confiscated to his couetous gut. Nay, we are such flesh-eating Saracens, that chaft fish may not content vs, but we delight in the murder of innocent mutton, in the vnpluming of pullerie, and quartering of calues and oxen. It is horrible and detestable, no godly Fishmonger that can digest it. Report (which our moderners clepe flundring Fame) puts mee in memorye of a notable icst I heard long agoe of Doctor Watson, verie conducible to the reprooфе of these fleshly-minded Belials. He being at supper, on a fasting or fish night at leaft, with a great number of his freinds and acquaintance, there chaunced to be in the company an outlandish doctor, who, when all other fell to such victuals (agreeing to the time) as were before them, he ouerflipt them; and there being one ioynt of flesh on the table for such as
had meate fromakes, fell freshly to it. After that
hunger (halfe conquered) had restored him to the
vse of his speach, for his excuse he said to his friend
that brought him there, ProfeBd, Domine, ego sum
malissimus piscator, meaning by-piscator, a Fishman:
(which is a libertie, as also malissmus, that out-
landish men in their familiar talke doo challenge,
at least vse, above vs). *At tu es bonissimus carnifex,*
quoth Doctor Watson, retorting very merrily his
owne licentious figures vpon him. So of vs it
may be said, we are Malissimi piscatores, but
bonissimi carnifices. I would English the iest, for
the edification of the temporaltie, but that it is not
so good in English as in Latine: and though it
were as good, it would not convert clubs and
clowted shoone from the flesh-pots of Egypt, to
the Prouant of the Lowe countreyes: they had
rather (with the Seruing-man) put vp a supplica-
tion to the Parliament house, that they might haue
a yard of pudding for a penie, than desire (with
the Baker) there might bee three ounces of bread
fold for a halfe penie.

*Alphonsus, King Philips Confessor,* that came
ouer with him to England, was such a
moderate man in his dyet, that he would
feede but once a day, and at that tyme
hee would feed so slenderly and sparingly,
as scarle serued to keep life and soule together.
One night, importunately inuited to a solemnne banquet, for fashion sake he fate downe among the rest, but by no entreatie could be drawn to eat any thing: at length, frute being set on the boord, he reacht an apple out of the dish, and put it in his pocket, which one marking, that fate right ouer againft him, afsk him, _Domine, cur es folicitus in craf tinum?_ Sir, _why are you carefull for the morrow?_ Where to he answerd moft soberly, _Imo hoc facio, mi amice, ut ne sim folicitus in craf tinum._ No, _I doo it, my frind, that I may not be carefull for the morrow:_ as though his appetite were a whole day contented with fo little as an apple, and that it were enough to pay the morrowes tribute to Nature.

Rare, and worthie to be registred to all posterities, is the Countie Molines (sometime the Prince of Parmaes companion) alterd course of life, who being a man that liued in as great pompe and delicacie as was possile for a man to doo, and one that wanted nothing but a kingdome that his heart could desiere. Vpon a day entering into a deepe melancholy by himselfe, hee fell into a discoursifie consideracion what this world was, how vaine and transtorie the pleasures/thereof, and how many times he had offended God by sur- fetting, gluttony, drunkennes, pride, whoredome,
& such like, and how hard it was for him, that liu'd in that prosperitie that he did, not to bee entangled with those pleasures: whereupon he presently resolu'd, twixt God and his owne conscience, to forfake it and al his allurements, and betake him to his severest forme of life vsed in their state. And with that cald all his Souldiers and acquaintance together, and, making knowen his intent vnto them, he distributed his liuing and possessions (which were infinite) amongst the poorest of them: and having not left himselfe the worth of one farthing vnder heauen, betooke him to the most beggerlie new erected Order of the Fryer Capuchines. Their Institution is, that they shall poiffe nothing whatsoever of their owne, more than the cloathes on their backes, continually to go bare foote, weare haire shirts, and lie vpon the hard bords, winter & summer time: they must haue no meat, nor aske any but what is giuen the voluntarily, nor must they lay vp from any meale to meale, but giue it to y poore, or els it is a great penaltie. In this seuerel humilitie liues this deuout Countie, and hath done this foure yeare, submitting himselfe to al the base drudgery of the house, as fetching water, making cleane the rest of their chambers, insomuch as he is the Junior of the Order. O what a notable rebuke were his honourable Lowlines to succeeding pride, if this
PIERCE PENILESSE.

prostrate spirit of his were not the seruant of Superstition: or hee misspent not his good worke on a wrong Faith.

Let but our English belly-gods punishe their pursie bodies with this strict peneance, and pro- fesse the Capuchinisme but one month, and Ie be their pledge, they shall not grow so like dry-fats as they doo. O it will make them iolly long-winded, to trot vp and downe the Dorter staires, and the water-tankard will keepe vnder the insurrection of their shoulders, the haire shirt will chafe whordome out of their boanes, and the hard lodging on the boards, take their flesh downe a button hole lower.

But/ if they might be induced to disstribute all their goods amongst the poore, it were to be hoped Saint Peter would let them dwell in the suburbs of heaven, whereas, otherwise, they must keepe aloofe at Pancredge, and not come neere the liberties by five leagues and aboue. It is your dooing (Diotrephes Diuell) that these stul-fed cor- morants to damnation, must bung vp all the welth of the Land in their snap-haunce bags, and poore Schollers and Souldiers wander in backe lanes, and the out-shiftes of the Citie, with neuer a rag to their backes: but our trust is, that by some intem- perance or other, you will tourne vp their heele one of these yeares together, and prouide them of
such vnthrifts to their heires, as shall spend in one weeke amongst good fellowes what they got by extortion and opression from Gentlemen all their life-time.

From Gluttonie in meates, let me descend to superfluitie in drink: a sinne, that euer since we haue mixt our fclues with the Low-countries, is counted honourable: but before we knew their lingring warres, was held in \\n\nhighest degree of hatred that might be. Then, if wee had seene a man goe wallowing in the streetes, or line sleeping vnder the boord, we would haue spet at him as a toade, and cald him foule drunken swine, and warnd all our friends out of his company: now, he is no body that cannot drinke super nagulum, carouse the Hunters hoop, quaffe up/ey freze crore, with leapes gloues, mumpes, fro[1]ickes, and a thousand such dominiering inuentions. He is reputed a pefant and a boore that will not take his licour profoundly. And you shall heare a Cauialier of the firt feather, a princococks that was but a Page the other day in the Court, and now is all to be frenchified in his Souldiers sute, stand vpon termes with God's wounds, you dishonour me fir, you do me the dis-grace if you do not pledge me as much as I drunke
to you: and, in the midst of his cups, stand vaunting his manhood, beginning every sentence, with when I first bore Armes, when he never bare any thing but his Lords rapier after him in his life. If he haue beene ouer, and visited a towne of Garrison, as a traуailer or passenger, he hath as great experience as the greatest Commander and chiefe Leader in England. A mightie deformer of mens manners and features, is this vnecessary vice of all other. Let him bee indued with no many vertues, and haue as much goodly proportion and fauour, as nature can bestow vpon a man: yet if hee be thirstie after his owne destruction, and hath no joy nor comfort, but when he is drowning his soule in a gallon pot, that one beastly imperfection wil utterly obscure all that is commendable in him: and all his good qualities sinke like lead downe to the bottome of his carrowing cups, where they will lie, like seas and dregges, dead and vnregarded of any man.

Clim of the clough, thou that vsed to drinke nothing but scalding lead and sulpher in hell, thou art not so greedie of thy night geare. O, but thou haft a soule swallow, if it come once to carousing of humane bloud: but thats but seldome once in seauen yeare, when theres a great execution, otherwise thou art tide at rack and manger, and drinkst nothing but the Aqua vitae of vengeance all thy
life time. The Proverbe giues it foorth, thou art a knaue, and therefore I haue more hope thou art some manner of a good fellowe: let mee intreate thee (since thou haft other iniquities inough to circumuent vs withall) to wipe this sinne out of the catalogue of thy subtiltie: helpe to blast the Vines, that they may beare no more grapes, and sowe the wines in the cellars of Marchants storehouses, that our Countreymen may not pisse out all their wit and thrift against the walles. King Edgar, because his subiects should not offend in swilling, & bibbing, as they did, caufed certaine iron cups to be chained to euery fountaine and wells side, and at euery Vintners doore, with iron pins in them, to fint euery man how much he shoulde drinke: and he that went beyond one of those pins forfeited a penny for euery draught. And, if Stories were well searcht, I beleue hoopes in quart pots were inuented to that ende, that euery man should take his hoope, and no more. I haue heard it iustified for a trueth by great Personages, that the olde Marquesse of Pisana (who yet liues) drinkes not once in seauen yeare: and I haue read of one Andron of Argos, that was so sildome thirstie, that he trauailed ouer the hot burning sands of Lybia, & never dranke. Then, why shoulde our colde Clime bring
foorth such fierie throates? Are we more thirstie than Spaine and Italy, where the Sunnes force is doubled? The Germaines and lowe Dutch, me thinkes, should bee continually kept moyst with the foggie aire and flinking miftes that arise out of their fennie foyle: but as their Countrey is overflowen with water, so are their heads alwaies overflowen with wine, and in their bellies they haue standing quag-mires & bogs of English beere.

One of their breede it was that writ the Booke, De Arte bibendi, a worshipfull treatise, fitte for none but Silenus and his Affe to set forth: besides that volume, we haue generall rules and injunctions, as good as printed precepts, or Statutes set downe by Acte of Parliament, that goe from drunkard to drunkard; as still to keepe your first man, not to leave any flockes in the bottome of the cup, to knock the glasse on your thumbe when you haue done, to haue some shooin horne to pull on your wine, as a rasher of the coles, or a redde herring, to stirre it about with a candles ende to make it taste better, and not to holde your peace whiles the pot is stirring.

Nor haue we one or two kinde of drunkards onely, but eight kindes. The first is Ape drunke, and he leapes, and sings, and hollowes, and daunceth for the heauens: the second is Lion drunke, and he flings the pots

N. II.
about the house, calls his Hoftefe whore, breaks
the glasfe windowes with his dagger, and is apt to
quarrell with any man that speaks to him: the
third is Swine drunke; heauy, lumpish, and sleepe,
and cries for a little more drinke, and a fewe more
cloathes: the fourth is Sheepe drunke, wife in his
own cóceipt, when he cannot bring foorth a right
word: the fift is Mawdlen drunke; when a fellow
wil weepe for kindnes in the midst of his Ale, and
kiffe you, faying, By God, Captaine, I loue thee:
go thy waies, thou doft not thinke fo often of me
as I do of thee, I would (if it pleased God) I could
not loue thee fo well as I doo: and then he puts
his finger in his eie, and cries: the fixt is Martin
drunke, when a man is drunke, and drinkes him-
selfe sober ere he stirre: the feuenth is Goate
drunke, when, in his drunkennes, he hath no
minde but on Lecherie: the eighth is Fox drunke,
when he is craftie drunke, as manie of the Dutch-
men bee, [that] will neuer bargaine but when they
are drunke. All these species, and more, haue I
feen practifed in one Companie at one fitting, when
I haue been permitted to remainder sober amongft
them, onely to note their feuerall humors. Hee
that plies any one of them harde, it will make him
to write admirable verses, and to haue a deepe
caffing heade, though hee were neuer fo very a
Dunce before.
Gentlemen, all you that will not haue your
braines twife sodden, or your flesh rotten
with the Dropzie, that loue not to goe
in greasie dublets, stockings out at the
heeles, and ware ale-house daggers at your backes,
forswear this flauering brauery, that will make
you haue stinking breathes, and your bodies smell
like Brewers’ aprons: rather keepe a snuffe in the
bottome of the glass to light you to bed withall,
than leave neuer an eye in your head to lead you
ouer the threshold. It will bring you, in your olde
age, to be companions with none but Porters and
Car-men, to talke out of a Cage, rayling as dronken
men are wont, a hundred boyes wondering about
them; and to dye sodainly, as Fol Long, the
Fencer, did, drinking *Aqua vitae*. From which
(as all the rest) good Lord deliuer *Pierce Peni-
leffe*.

The nurfe of this enormitie (as of all euills) is
Idlenes, or sloth, which, hauing no pain-
ful Prouidence to set him selfe a worke,
runnes headlong, with the raines in his own hand,
into all lasciuiousnesse and sensualitie that may bee.
Men, when they are idle, and know not what to
do, faith one, Let vs goe to the Stilliard, and drinke
Rhenish wine. Nay, if a man knew where a good
whorhouse wer, faith another, it were somwhat like.
Nay, faith the third, let vs go to a dicing house or
a bowling alley, and there we shall have some sport for our money. To one of these three (at hand, quoth pick-purse) your evil Angelship, maister mani-headed beast, conduces them, \textit{Vbi quid agitur}—betwixt you and their foules be it, for I am no Drawer, Box-keeper, or Pander, to bee priuie to their sports. If I were to paint Sloth, (as I am not sene in the sweetenings) by Saint \textit{John} the Evangelist, I sweare I would draw it like a Stationer that I knowe, with his thumb vnder his girdle, who if a man come to his stall and aske him for a booke, neuer ftirs his head, or looks vpon him, but stands ftone ftill, and speaks not a word: only with his little finger points backwards to his boy, who must be his interpreter, and so al the day, gaping like a dumbe image, he fits without motion, except at fuch times as he goes to dinner or supper: for then he is as quicke as other three, eating fixe times every day. If I would raunge abroad, and looke in at fluggards key-holes, I shoulde finde a number lying a bed to faue charges of ordinaries, & in winter, when they want firing, lofing halfe a weeks Commons together, to keepe them warme in the linnen. And hold you content, this Summer an vnder-meale of an afternoone long doth not amisle to exercize the eies withall. Fat men and Farmers fonnes, that sweate much with eating

\textit{Videlicet, before he come out of his bed, then a set breakfast, the dinner, then after noones munchings, a supper, and a reresupper.}
harde cheefe, and drinking olde wine, muft haue some more eafe than yong boyes, that take their pleasure all day running vp and downe.

Setting iefting aside, I hold it a great disputable question, which is a more euil man, of him that is an idle glutton at home, or a retchleffe vnthrift abroad? The glotton at home doth nothing but engender diseases, pamper his fleshe into luft, and is good for none but his owne gut: the vnthrift abroad exer- cifeth his bodie at dauncing schoole, fence schoole, tennis, and all fuch recreations: the vintners, the viétuallers, /the dicing-houfes, and who not, get by him. Suppose he lofe a little now and then at play, it teacheth him wit: and how shou'd a man know to eschue vices, if his owne experience did not acquaint him with their inconueniences? Omne ignotum pro magnifico est: that villainie we haue made no aßayes in, we admire. Befides, my vagrant Reueller haunts Playes, and sharpens his wits with frequenting the company of Poets: he emboldens his blushing face by courting faire women on the sodaine, and lookes into all Eftates by converfing with them in publike places. Nowe tell me whether of thefe two, the heauy headed gluttonous house doue, or this liuely, wanton, young Gallant, is like to prooue the wiser man, and better member in the Common wealth? If
my youth might not be thought partiall, the fine qualified Gentleman, although vnftaid, shoulde care it clean away from the lasie clownish droane.

Sloth in Nobilitie, Courtiers, Schollers, or any men, is the chiefeft cause that brings them in contempt. For, as induftric and vnfatigable toyle raifeth meane perfons from obscure houfes to high thrones of authoritie: fo Sloath, and sluggiſh security, caufeth proud Lordes to tumble from the towers of their starry difcents, and bee trod vnder foote of euery inferior Beſonian. Is it the lofty treading of a Galliard, or fine grace in telling of a loue tale amongſt Ladies, can make a man reuerent of the multitude? no, they care not for the falfe glistering of gay garments, or insinuating curteſie of a carpet Peere; but they delight to fee him shine in Armour, and oppose himſelfe to honourable daunger, to participate a voluntarie penie with his fouldiers, and relieve part of their wante out of his owne purfe. That is the course he that will be popular muſt take, which, if he neglect, and fit dallying at home, nor will be awakte by any indignities out of his loue-dreame, but suffer euery vpſtart groome to defie him, set him at naught, and shake him by the beard vn-reuengde, let him ſtraight take orders, and bee a Church-man, and then his patience may passe for a vertue: but otherwise, to be ſuspected of cowardife,
and not car'd for of any. The only enemy to Sloth, is contention and emulation; as to propose one man to my selfe, that is the only myrrour of our Age, and strive to outgoe him in vertue. But this strife must be so tempered, that we fall not from the eagerness of prayse, to the enuying of their persons: for, then, we leave running to the goale of glory, to spurne at a stone that lies in our way; and so did Atlante, in the middest of her course stoop to take vp the golden apple by her enemy scattered in her way, and was out-runne by Hippomenes. The contrary to this contention, & emulation, is securitie, peace, quiet, tranquillitie: when we have no aduersary to prie into our actions, no malicious eye, whose pursuings our private behauior, might make vs more vigilant over our imperfections, than otherwise we would be.

That State or Kingdome that is in league with all the World, and hath no forraigne sword to vexe it, is not half so strong or confirmed to endure, as that which liues every houre in feare of inuaision. There is a certaine waste of the people for whom there is no use, but warre: and these men must have some employment still to cut them off. Nam si foras hostem non habent, domi inventent. If they have no service abroad, they will make mutinies at home. Or if the affayres of the State be such, as
cannot exhale all these corrupt excrements, it is very expedient they have some light toyes to busie their heads withall, to cast before them as bones to gnaw upon, which may keepe them from having leasure to intermeddle with higher matters.

To this effect, the policie of Playes is verie necessary, howsoever some shallow-braind censurers (not the deepest searchers into the secrets of government) mightily oppugne them. For whereas the after-noone being the idlest time of the day; wherein men that are their owne masters, (as Gentlemen of the Court, the Innes of the Court, and the number of Captaines and Souldiers about London) doo wholly bestow themselves upon pleasure, and that pleasure they divide (how vertuously it skillles not) either into gameing, following of harlots, drinking, or seeing a Play: is it not then better (since of four extremes all the world cannot keepe them but they will choose one) that they should betake them to the leaft, which is Playes? Nay, what if I prooue Playes to be no extreame; but a rare exercife of vertue? First, for the subject of them (for the most part) it is borrowed out of our English Chronicles, wherein our forefathers valiant actes (that haue lien long buried in rustie brafs and worme-eaten bookes) are reuied, and they themselves rayfed from the Graue of Oblition, and brought to pleade their
aged Honours in open presence: than which, what can be a sharper reproofe to these degenerate effeminate dayes of ours?

How would it haue ioyed braue Talbot (the terror of the French) to thinke that after he had lyen two hundred yeare in his Toomb, he shou'd triumph againe on the Stage, and haue his bones new embalmed with the teares of ten thousand spectators at leaft, (at feuerall times) who, in the Tragedian that represents his person, imagine they behold him fresh bleeding.

I will defend it against anie Collian, or clubfifted Vfurer of them all, there is no immortalitie can be giuen a man on earth like vnto Playes. What talke I to them of immortalitie, that are the onely underminers of Honour, & doe enuie any man that is not sprung vp by bafe Brokerie like themselves. They care not if all the auncient Houfes were rooted out, so that, like the Burgomafters of the Low countries, they might share the government amongst them as States, & be quarter-mafters of our Monarchie. All Arts to them are vanitie: and, if you tell them what a glorious thing it is to haue Henry the fifth represented on the Stage, leading the French King prisoner, and forcing both him and the Dolphin to sweare fealty. I, but (will they say) what doo we get by it? respecting neither the right of Fame that is due to true
Nobilitie deceased, nor what hopes of eternitie are to be proposed to aduentrous mindes, to encourage them forward, but onely their execrable lucre, & filthy vnquenchable avarice.

They know when they are dead they shal not be brought vpon the Stage for any goodnes, but in a merriment of the Vfurer and the Diuel, or buying Armes of the Herald, who giues them the Lyon, without tongue tayle or tallents, because his master whom he must serue is a Townesman, and a man of peace, and must not keepe any quarrelling beafts to annoy his honest neighbours.

In Playes, all cooisonages, all cunning drifts ouerguylded with outward holinesse, all stratagems of warre, all the canker-wormes that breede on the rust of peace, are most liuely anatomiz’d: they shew the ill succeffe of treafon, the fall of hafty climbers, the wretched ende of vfurpers, the miserie of ciuil diffention, and how iuft God is euermore in punishing of murther. And to prooue euery one of these allegations, could I propound the circumftances of this play and that play, if I meant to handle this Theame other wise than obiter. What shoul I say more? they are fower pills of reprehension, wrapt vp in sweete words. Wheras some Petitioners to the Counfaile against them obiec’t, they corrupt the youth of
the Citie, and withdrawe Prentifes from their worke; they heartely wish they might be troubled with none of their youth nor their prentifes; for some of them (I meane the ruder handicraftes seruants) neuer come abroad, but they are in danger of vndoing: and as for corrupting them when they come, thats false; for no Play they haue, encourageth any man to tumults or rebellion, but layes before fuch the halter and the gallowes; or prayseth or approoueth pride, luft, whoredome, prodigalitie, or drunkennes, but beates them downe vtterly. As for the hindrance of Trades and Traders of the Citie by them, that is an Article foysted in by the vintners, ale-wiues, and victuallers, who furnife, if there were no Playes, they shoule haue all the companie that resort to them, lye bowzing and beere-bathing in their houfes euery after-noone. Nor fo, nor fo, good brother bottle-ale, for there are other places beseide where money can beftow it felfe: the figne of the fmocke will wyle your mouth cleane: and yet I haue heard ye haue made/her a tenant to your tap-houfes. But what fhall he doo that hath fpent himfelfe? where fhall he haunt? Faith, when dice, luft, and drunkennes, and all haue dealt vpon him, if there bee neuer a Play for him to goe to for his penie, he fits melancholie in his chamber, deuizing vpon felonie or treason,
and howe hee may beft exalt himfelfe by mischiefe.

In Augustus time (who was the Patron of all witty sports) there happened a great Fray in Rome about a Plaier, insomuch as all the Citie was in an vprore: whereupon the Emperour (after the broyle was somewhat ouer-blown) cald the Player before him, and afs what was the reason that a man of his qualitie durft presume to make such a brawle about nothing. He smilingly replyde, It is good for thee O Cæfar, that the peoples heads are troubled with brawles and quarrels about vs and our light matters: for otherwise they would looke into thee and thy matters. Read Lipsius or any prophane or Chriflian Politician, and you fhal finde him of this opinion.

Our Players are not as the players beyond sea, a fорт of fquirting baudie Comedians, that haue whores and common Curtizans to play womens parts, and forbeare no immodest speech or vnchaft action that may procure laughter; but our Scene is more ftately furnifht than euer it was in the time of Roscius, our representations honorable, and full of gallant resolution, not confifting, like theirs, of a Pantaloun, a Whore, and a Zanie, but of Emperours, Kings, and Princes: whose true Tragedies (Sophocleo cothurno) they doo vaunt.
Not *Rofcius* nor *Æsop*, those Tragedians adm- myred before Christ was born, could euer performe more in action than famous *Ned Allen*. I must accuse our Poets of sloth and partialitie, that they will not boast in large impressions what worthy men (aboue all Nations) *England* affoords. Other Countries cannot haue a Fidler breake a string but they will put it in print, and the olde *Romanes* in the writings they publisht, thought scorne to vie any but domestical examples of their owne home-bred Aëtors, Schollers, and Champions, and them they would extoll to the third and fourth Generation: Coblers, Tinkers, Fencers, none escapt them, but they mingled them all on one Gallimafrey of glory.

Heere I haue vsed a like Methode, not of tying my selfe to mine owne Countrey, but by insifting in the experience of our time: and, if I euer write any thing in Latine, (as I hope one day I shal) not a man of any desert here amongst vs, but I will haue vp. *Tarlton, Ned Allen, Knell, Bentlie,* shall be made knowen to *France, Spaine*, and *Italie*: and not a part that they surmounted in, more than other, but I will there note and set downe, with the manner of their habites and attyre.

The child of Sloth is Lecherie, which I haue plac't last in my order of handling: a sinne that
is able to make a man wicked that should describe it; for it hath more starting-holes than a "five hath holes, more Clyents than Westminster-hall, more diseases than Newgate. Call a Leete at Byshopgate, & examine how every second house in S[h]orditch is mayntayned: make a priuie search in Southwarke, and tell mee how many Shee-Inmates you finde: nay, goe where you will in the Suburbes, and bring me two Virgins that haue vowd Chaftity, and Ile builde a Nunnery.

Westminster, Westminster, much maydenhead haft thou to answere for at the day of Judgement. Thou hadst a Sanctuary in thee once, but haft few Saints left in thee now. Surgeons and Apothecaries, you know what I speake is true; for you liue (like Sumners) vpon the finnes of the people; tell me is there any place so lewde as this Ladie London? Not a Wench sooner creepes out of the hell, but she is of the Religion. Some wiues will sowe Mandrake in their gardens, and crosse-neighbourhoode with them is counted good-fellowship.

The Court I dare not touch, but surely there (as in the Heauens) bee many falling starres, and but one true Diana. Consubtudo peccandi tollit senfum peccati. Cuftome is a Lawe, and Luft holdes it for a Lawe, to liue without Lawe. Lais, that had
so many Poets to her Louers, could not allwayes preferue her beauty with their prayses. Marble will weare away with much raine: Gold wil rust with moyst keeping: & the ritcheſt garments are subiect to Times Moath-frets; Clitenneſtra, that flew her husband to enioye the Adulturer Ægisus, and bathde herselle in Milke evry day to make her young agayne, had a time when shee was ashamed to viewe herselle in a looking glaffe, and her body withered, her minde being greene. The people poynted at her for a murtherer, young children howted at her as a ſtrumpet: shame, misery, fickneffe, beggery, is the beſt end of vnceanneffe.

Lais, Cleopatra, Helen, if our Clyme had any ſuch, noble Lord warden of the Wenches & Anglers, I commend them with the rest of our vnceanle ſifters in Shorditch, the Spittle, Southwarke, Weſminster, and Turnbull ſreete, to the protection of your Porterſhip: hoping you will ſpeedily carry them to hell, there to keepe open houſe for all young diuels that come, and not let our ayre bee contaminated with their ſixpenie damnation any longer.

Your Diuelships
bounden executor,
Pierce Penileſſe.
A / Supplication callest thou this? (quoth the Knight of the post) it is the maddest Supplication that euer I sawe; me thinkes thou hast handled all the seauen deadly sinnes in it, and spared none that exceeds his limites in any of them. It is wel done to practife thy witte, but (I beleue) our Lord will cun thee little thanke for it.

The worse for me (quoth I), if my deftinie be such, to lose my labour every where, but I meane to take my chance, be it good or bad. Wel, haft thou any more that thou wouldst haue me to doo? (quoth hee) Onely one fute, (quoth I) which is this, that sixt opportunitie so conueniently servus, you would acquaint me with the state of your infernal regiment: and what that hel is, where your Lord holdes his throne; whether a world like this, which spirites like outlawes doo inhabit, who, being banisht from heauen, as they are from their Countrie, enuie that any shal bee more happy than they: and therefore seeke all meanes possible, that Wit or Arte may inuent, to make other men as wretched as themselves: or, whether it be a place of horror, stench, and darknesse, where men see meat, but can get none, or are euery thirstie, and ready to swelt for drinke, yet haue not the power to tast the coole streames that runne hard at their feete: where (permutata vicissitudine) one Ghost
torments an other by turnes, and hee that al his
life time was a great fornicator, hath all the diseases
of luft continually hanging vpon him, and is con-
strayned (the more to augment his misery) to haue
congress every howre with hagges and olde witches:
and he that was a great drunkard heere on earth,
hath his penance assignde him, to carouse himselfe
drunke with dishwash and Vineger, and surfet
foure times a day with fower Ale and small Beere:
as fo of the rest, as the vsurer to swallow moulten
golde, the glutton to eate nothing but toades, and
the Murtherer too be stil stabd with daggers, but
neuer die: or whether (as some phantaftical refyners
of philosophie will needes perfwade vs) hell is no-	hing but error, and that none but fooles and
Idiotes and Mechanicall men, that haue no learn-
ing, shall be damnd: of these doubts if you will
resolue me, I shall thinke my self to haue profited
greatly by your companie.

He hearing me so inquisitiue in matters aboue
humane capacitie, entertained my greedie humor
with this anfwer. Poets and Philosophers, that
take a pride in inuenting new opinions, haue
sought to renoume their wits by hunting after
strange conceits of heauen and hell; all generally
agreeing, that such places there are, but how in-
habited, by whom governed, or what betides them
that are transported to the one or other, not two of

N. 11.
them iumpe in one tale. We, that to our terror and griefe doe knowe their dotage by our sufferings, reioyce to thinke how these fillie flyes play with the fire that muft burne them.

But leauing them to the Laborynth of their fond curiositie, shall I tell thee in a word what Hell is? It is a place where ſ foules of vntemperate men, & ill liuers of al sorts, are detayned and imprisoned till the generall Refurrection, kept and possesed chiefly by spirites, who lye like Souldiours in Garrison, readie to be sent about any seruice into the world, whensoeuer Lucifer, their Lieftenaunt Generall, pleafeth. For the fçituation of it, in respect of heauen, I can no better compare it than to Callis and Douer: for, as a man ſtanding vpon Callis Sands may see men walking on Douer Clyffes, fo easilly may you discerne Heauen from the fartheſt part of hell, and behold the melodie and motions of the Angels and Spirits there reſident, in ſuch perfect manner, as if you were amongſt them; which, how it worketh in the mindes and foules of them that haue no power to apprehend ſuch felicitie, it is not for me to intimate, because it is preiudiciall to our Monarchie.

I would bee forrie (quoth I) to importune you in any matter of secrecie: yet this I desire, if it might bee done without offence, that you would
fatisfie me in full fort, and according to truth, what the Diuell is whom you serve? as also how he began, and how farre his power and authoritie extends?

_Perfie, _beleeue me, thou shriveft me very neere in this latter demaund, which concerneth vs more deeply than the former, and may worke vs more damage than thou art aware of: yet in hope thou wilt conceale what I tellest thee, I wil lay open our whole estate plainly and simply vnto thee as it is: but first I will begin with the opinions of former times, & so haften forward to that _manifeffe verum_ that thou seekest. Some men there be that, building too much vpon reason, perfwade themselues that there are no Diuells at all, but that this word _Daemon_ is such another morall of mischiese, as the Poets Dame Fortune is of mishap: for as vnder the fiction of this blinde Goddesse we ayme at the folly of Princes and great men in disposing of honors, that oftentimes preferre fooles and disgrace wise men, and alter their fauours in turning of an eye, as Fortune turns her wheele: so vnder the person of this olde _Gnathonicall_ companion, called the Diuell, we shrowd all subtilltie, masking vnder the name of simplicitie, all painted holines devouring widoweres housees, all gray-headed Foxes clad in sheapes garments; so that the Diuell (as they make it) is onely a pestilent humour in a man,
of pleasure, profit, or policie, that violently carries him away to vanitie, villanie, or monstrous hypocrisy: vnder vanitie I comprehend not onely all vaine Arts and studies whatsoever, but also dishonestable prodigality, vntemperate vnerie, and that hateful sinne of selfe-loue, which is so common among vs: vnder villany I comprehend murder, treason, theft, coumynage, cut-throat coquetise, and such like: laftly, vnder hypocrifie, al Machiauiliisme, puritanisme, & outward gloasing with a mans enemie, and protesting friendfhip to him I hate, and meane to harme, all vnder-hand cloaking of bad actions with Common-wealth pretences: and, finally, all Italianate conueyances, as to kill a man, and then mourne for him, quasi vero it was not by my content, to be a slawe to him that hath iniur'd me, and kiffe his feete for opportunities of reuenge, to be seuer in punishing offenders, that none might haue the benefite of such meanes but myselfe, to vfe men for my purpose & then caft them off, to seeke his /destruction that knowes my secrets: and such as I haue imployed in any murther or stratagem, to set them priuilie together by the eares, to stab each other mutually, for fear of bewraying me: or, if that faile, to hire them to humor one another in such courfes as may bring them both to the gallowes. These, and a thousand more such sleights, hath hypocrifie learned by travailing strange
Countries. I will not say she puts them in practice here in England, although there be as many false brethren & craftie knaues here amongst vs as in any place: witnes the poore Miller of Cambridge, that, having no room for his hen-loft but the Testor of his bed, and it was not possible for any hungrie Poultrers to come there, but they must stand upon the one side of it, and so not steal them but with great hazard; had in one night notwithstanding (when hee and his wife were a snorting) all the whole progenie of their Pullerie taken away, and neither of them heard anie sturring: it is an odde tricke, but what of that, we must not stand upon it, for wee haue grauer matters in hand than the stealing of Hennes. Hypocrisie, I remember, was our Text, which was one of the chiefe morral Diuels, our late Doctors affirme to bee most busie in these dayes: and busie it is, in trueth, more than anye Bee that I knowe: now you talke of a Bee, Ile tell you a tale of a Battle-dore.

The Beare on a time, beeing chiefe Burgomaster of all the Beasts vnder the Lyon, gan thinke with himsfelfe how hee might surfet in pleasure, or beft husband his Authoritie to enlardge his delight and contentment. With that hee beganne to prye and to smell through euery corner of the Forrest for praye, to haue a thousande imaginations with him-
felfe what daintie morfell he was mafter of, and yet had not tafted: whole Heards of fheepe had hee deuoured, and was not satisfied; fat Oxen, Heyfers, Swine, Calues, and young Kiddes, were his ordinarie vyands: he longed for horse-flesh, and went presently to a medowe, where a fat Campell was grazing, whom, fearing to encounter with force, because he was a huge beast and well shod,/he thought to betray under the colour of demaunding homage, hoping that, as he should stoop to doo him truage, he might feaze vpon his throat, and stifle him before he should be able to recover himselfe from his false embrace: but therin he was deceiued: for, comming vnto this stately Beast with this imperious message, in stead of doing homage vnto him, he lifted vp one of his hindmoft heele, and stroake him such a blowe on the forhead that hee ouerthrew him. Thereat not a little mou'd, and enrag'd, that he should be so dishonored by his inferiour, as he thought, he consulted with the Ape how he might be reuëged. The Ape, abhorring him by nature, because he ouer-lookt him so Lordly, and was by so many degrees greater than he was, aduised him to digge a pit with his pawes right in the way where this big boand Gentleman shou’d passe, that so stumbling and falling in, he might lightly skip on his backe, and bridle him, and then hee [could] come and seaze on
him at his pleasure. No sooner was this persuaded than performed: for enuie, that is neuer idle, could not sleepe in his wrath, or ouer-slip the leaft opportunitie, till he had seene the confusion of his enemie. Alas, goodly Creature, that thou mightest no longer liue. What availeth thy gentlenes, thy provewse, or the plentiful pasturage wherein thou wert fed, since malice triumphs ouer al thou commandest? Well may the Mule rife vp in armes, and the Affe bray at the Authors of thy death: yet shall their furie be fastal to themselves, before it take hold on these Traitours. What needeth more words? the devourer feedes on his captiue, and is gorged with bloud. But as avarice and crueltie are euermore thirstie, so far'd it with this hungrie Ufurper: for hauing flefht his ambition with this treacherous conquest, he past along through a groue, where a Heard of Deare were a ranging; whom, when he had stedfastly surveyed from the fatteft to the leanest, hee singled out one of the fairest of the companie, with whom he meant to close up his stomacke instead of cheefe: but because the Woodmen were euer stirring thereabout, and it was not possible for one of his coate to commit fuch outrage vndescried, and that, if he were espied, his life were in perill; though not with the Lyon, whose eyes he coulde blinde as he lift, yet with the leffer fort of the brutish Commimentie, whom no flattrie
might pacifie. Therefore, he determined flylie and priuilie to poyfon the streame where this iolly Forester wonte'd to drink; & as he determined, so he did: whereby it fell out, that when the Sunne was ascended to his height, & all the nimble Citizens of the Wood betooke them to their Laire, this youthfull Lord of the Lawnds, all faint and malcontent, (as prophecying his neere approaching mishap by his languishing) with a lazie, wallowing pace, strayed aside from the rest of his fellowship, and betooke him all carelessly to the corrupted fountaine that was prepared for his Funerall. Ah, woe is me, this poyfon is pitiles. What need I say more, since you know it is death with whom it encounters. And yet cannot all this expence of life, set a period to infatiable Murther: but still it hath some anuile to worke vpon, and ouercafts all opposite prosperitie, that may any way shadow his glorie. Too long it were to reherse all the practices of this sauadge blood-hunter: how he affailed the Unicorne as he slept in his den, and tore the hart out of his breast ere he could awake: how he made the lesser beasts lie in wait one for the other, and the Crocodyle to coape with the Bafiliske, that when they had enterchaungeably weaken'd each other, hee might come and insult ouer them both as he lift. But these were lesser matters, which daily vse had wore out of mens mouthes, and
he himself had so customably practised, that often exercise had quite abrogated the opinion of sinne, & impudencie throughly confirmed an undaunted defiance of vertue in his face. Yet new-fangled lust, that in time is wearie of welfare, & will bee as soone cloyed with too much ease and delicacie, as Pouertie with labour and scarcitie, at length brought him out of loue with this greedie, bestiall humour: and now he affected a milder varietie in his diet: he had bethought him what a pleasant thing it was to eate nothing but honie another while, and what great store of it there was in that Countrey.

Now did he cast in his head, that if hee might bring the husbandmen of the foyle in opinion that they might buy honey cheaper than being at such charges in keeping of Bees, or that those bees which they kept were most of the drones, & what should such idle drones doe with such flately Hyues, or lye sucking at such precious Honnicombes; that if they were tooke away from them, and distributed equally abroad, they would releue a great many of painfull labourers that had need of them, and would continually liue serviceable at their commaund, if they might enjoy such a benefite. Nay more, let them giue Waspes but onely the wax, and dispose of the honnie as they thinke good, and they shall humme and buzze a thousand times lowder than
they, and haue the hiue fuller at the yeeres end (with yong ones, I meane) than the Bees are wont in ten yere.

To broach this deuice, the Foxe was addreft like a shepheards dogge, and promift to haue his Pattent feald, to bee the Kings Poulterer for euer, if hee could bring it to passe. Faith, quoth he, and Ie put it in a venter, let it hap how it will. With that he grew in league with an old Camelion, that could put on all shapes, and imitate any colour, as occasion serued, and him he addreft, sometime like an Ape to make sport, & then like a Crocodile to weep, sometime like a Serpent to sting, and by and by like a Spaniel to fawne, that with these fundrie formes, (applyde to mens variable humors) he might perswade the world he ment as he spake, and only intended their good, when he thought nothing leffe. In this disguife, these two deceivers went vp & downe, and did much harme vnder the habite of Simplicitie, making the poore filly Swaines beleue they were cunning Phisitons, and well seene in all Cures, that they could heale any maladie, though neuer so daungerous, & restore a man to life that had been dead two dayes, onely by breathing vpon him: aboue all things they perswaded them, that the honny that their Bees brought forth, was poysnous and corrupt, by reasone that those floures and hearbs, out of which
it was gathered and exhaled, were subject to the
infection of every Spidder and venimous Canker,
and not a loathsome Toade (how detestable foeuer)
but reposde himselfe vnder theyr shadow, and lay
fucking at their rootes continually: wheras in other
Countries, no noisome or poifnous creature might
lie, by reason of the imputed goodnes of the Soyle,
or careful diligence of the Gardners aboue ours, as
for example, Scotland, Denmarke, & some more pure
parts of the 17 Prouinces. These perswasions made
the good honest Husbandmen to pause, and mistrust
their owne wits very much, in nourishing such
dangerous Animals, but* yet, I know not how
antiquitie and cuftome so ouer-rule their feare, that none would resolue to
abandon them on the sodaine, til they
saw a further inconuenience: whereby my two
cunning Philosophers were driuen to studie Galen
anew, and seeke splenatiue simples, to purge their
popular Patients of the opinion of their olde Tra-
ditions and Cuftomes: which, how they wrought
with the most part that had leaft wit, it were a
world to tell. For now nothing was Canonica!l
but what they spake, no man would conferse with
his wife but first askt their aduise, nor pare his
nayles, nor cut his beard, without their prescrip-
tion: so senseles, so wauering is the light vncon-
staunt Multitude, that will daunce after cuerie
mans pype; and sooner prefer a blinde harper that can squeake out a new horne-pipe, than Alcinous or Appollos varietie, that imitates the eight strains of the Doryan melodie. I speak this to amplifie y nouell folly of the headlong vulgar, that making their eyes and eares vassailes to the legerdemaine of these iugling Mountebanks, are presently drawne to contemne Art and experience, in comparison of the ignorance of a number of audacious ideots. The Fox can tell a faire tale, and couers all his knauerie vnder conscience, and the Camelion can addresse himself like an Angell whensoever he is disposed to worke mischief by myracles: but yet in the end, their secret drifts are laide open, and Linceus eyes, that see through stone walles, haue made a passage into the close couerture of their hypocrifie.

For one daye, as these two Deuisers were plotting by themselues how to drive all the Bees from their Honnycomes, by putting wormewood in their Hyues, and strewing Henbane and Rue in euery place where they resort: a Flye that past by, and heard all their talke, fromaking the Foxe of olde, for that he had murthred so many of his kindred with his flayle-driuing taile, went presently and buz'd in Linceus eares, the whole purport of their malice: who awaking his hundred eyes at these vnexpectted tidings gan pursue them wheresoeuer
they went, & trace their intents as they proceeded into action, so that ere halfe their baytes were cast forth, they were apprehended and imprisoned, and all their whole counsaile detected. But long ere this, the Beare, impatient of delayes, and consum’d with an inward griefe in himselfe, that hee might not haue his will of a fat Hinde that out-ran him, he went into the woods all melancholie, and there dyed for pure anger: leauing the Foxe and the Camelion to the destinie of their desert, and mercie of their Judges. How they scapte I knowe not, but some faye they were hangd, and so weele leaue them.

How lik’ft thou of my tale, friend Persie? Haue I not described a right earthly Diuell vnto thee, in the discourse of this bloodie minded Beare? or canst thou not attract the true image of Hypocrifie, vnder the description of the Foxe and the Camelion?

Yes, very well (quoth I); but I would gladly haue you returne to your first subiect, since you haue moued doubts in my minde, which you haue not yet discuft.

Of the sundrie opinions of the Diuell thou meanest, and them that imagine him to haue no exixtence, of which sort are they that first inuented the Prouerbe, *Homo homini Daemon*: meaning thereby, that that power which we call the Diuell,
and the miniftring Spirits belonging to his king-
dom e are tales and fables, and meere bugge-beares
to scarre boyes: and that there is no such essence
at all, but onely it is a terme of large content,
describing the rancor, grudge, & bad dealing of
one man towards another: as, namely, when one
friend talkes with another subtilly, and seekes to
dyue into his commoditie, that hee may deprive
him of it craftilie; when the sonne seeks the death
of the father, that he may infeoffed in his wealth:
& the stepdame goes about to make away her
sonne-in-law, that her children may inherit: whē
brothers fall at iarres for portions, & shall, by
open murther or priuy conspiracy, attempt the
confusion of each other, only to ioyne house to
house, and vnite two Liuelihoods in one: when
the feruant shal rob his Master, and men put in
truft, start away from their oathes and vowes, they
care not how.

In such cases & many more, may one man be
sayd to bee a diuell to another, & this is the second
opinion. The third is that of Plato, who not onely
affirmeth that there are diuels, but deuided them
into three forts, every one a degree of dignitie
aboue the other; the first are thofe, whose bodies
are copact of ſh pureſt ayrie Element, combined
with ſuch tranparant threeds, that neither they
do partake fo much fire as ſhould make them
visible to fight, or have any such affinitie with the earth, as they are able to be prest or toucht: & these he setteth in the highest incomprehensible degree of heauen. The second, he maketh these, whom *Apuleius* doth call reasonable Creatures, passing in minde and eternall in Time, being those *apostata* spirites that rebelled with *Belzebub*: whose bodies, before their fall, were bright and pure all like to the former: but, after their transgression, they were obscured in a thicke, fiery matter, and ever after assigned to darknes. The third, he attributes to those men that, by some divine knowledge or understanding, seeming to aspire above mortalitie, are called *Daemona*, (that is) *Gods*: for this word *Daemon* contayneth eyther, and *Homer* in euery place doth vse it both for that omnipotent power that was before al things, and the euill spirite that leadeth men to error: so doth *Syrianus* testifie, that *Plato* was called *Daemon*, because he disputed of deepe Common-wealth matters, greatly available to the benefite of his Countrey: and *Aristotle* because he wrote at large of al things subject to moving and fence. Then belike (quoth I) you make this word *Daemon*, a capable name of Gods, of men, and of diuells, which is farre distant/from the scope of my demand: for I doo only inquire of the diuel, as this common appellation of the Diuel, signifieth a malignant spirite, enemie to man-
kinde, and a hater of God and all goodnes. Tho\'se are the second kinde, sa\'d he, virtuously termed de\'trac\'ters, or accus\'ers, that are in knowledge infinite, in\'somuch as, by the quickness of their wits & agreeable mixtures of the Elements, they so com\'prehend tho\'se semin\'arie vertues to men vn\'known, that tho\'se things which, in course of time or by growing degrees, Nature of its\'elfe can effect, they, by their art and skil in haft\'ning the works of Nature, can contriue and compasse in a moment: as the Magit\'ians of Pharao, who, whereas Nature, not without some interpo\'sition of time and ordi\'narie causes of conception, brings forth frogs, serpents, or any liuing thing els, they, without all such distance of space, or circum\'scription of season, eu\'en in a thought, as foone as their King commanded, couered the land of \(\text{Aegipt}\) with this mon\'strous encrease. Of the originall of vs spirites, the Scripture most amply maketh mention, namely, that Luci\'fer, (before his fall) an Arch-angel, was a cle\'er body, compa\'ct of the purest and brightest of the ayre, but after his fall hee was vayled with a gro\'ser substance, and tooke a new forme of darke and thicke ayre, which he still reteyneth. Neither did he onely fall, when hee stroue with Michael, but drewe a number of Angels to his fa\'\'tion; who ioynt partakers of his proud reuolt, were likewe\'se partakers of his punishment, and all thrust
out of heauen together by one judgement: who euer since doo nothing but wander about the Earth, and tempt and enforce frayle men to enterpris[e] all wickednes that may be, and commit most horrible and abominable things against God. Meruaile not that I discouer so much of our estate vnto thee: for the Scripture hath more than I mention, as S. Peter, where he sayth that God spared not his Angels that sinned: and in another place; wher he faith that they are bound with the chains of darknes, and throwne headlong into hell: which is not meant of any locall place in the earth, or vnder the waters; for, as A[ust]in affirmeth, wee doo inhabite the Region vnder the Moone, / and haue the thick aire assigned vs as a prison, from whence we may with small labour cast our nets where wee lift: yet are we not so at our disp[o]sition, but that we are still commanded by Lucifer, (although we are in number infinite) who retaining that pride wherewith he arrogantly affected the Maieftie of God, hath still his miniſtring Angels about him, whom he employes in feuerall charges, to seduce & deceive as him seemeth best: as thofe spirites which the Latins call Iouios and Antemeridiano[s], to speake out of Oracles, and make the people worship them as Gods, when they are nothing but deluding Diuels, that couet to haue a falfe Deitie ascribed vnto them, & draw men vnto their loue by won-
ders & prodigies, that els would hate them deadly, if they knewe their malevolence and enuy. Such a monarchizing spirit it was that sayd vnto Christ, *If thou wilt fall downe, and worship me, I will give thee all the Kingdomes of the earth:* and such a spirit it was that possieth the Libian Sapho, and the Emperour Dioctelian, who thought it the blessedst thing that might be to be called God. For the one being weary of humane honor, & inspired with a supernaturall folly, taught little birds, that were capable of speech, to pronounce distinctly, *Magnus Deus Sapho:* that is to say, *A great god is Sapho:* which words, when they had learned readily to caroll, and were perfect in their note, he let them flie at randome, that so dispersing themselves every where, they might induce the people to account of him as a God. The other was so arrogant, that he made his subjects fall prostrate on their faces, and lifting vp their hands to him as to heauen, adore him as omnipotent.

The second kind of Diuels, which he most imployeth, are those northerne *Marci,* called the spirits of reuenge, & the authors of massacres, & seedsmen of mischiefe: for they haue commision to incense men to rapines, sacriledge, theft, murther, wrath, furie, and all manner of cruelties, & they commaund certaine of the Southern spirits (as
flaues) to wa yt vpon them, as alfo great Arioch, that is tearmed the spirite of reuenge.

These / know how to diffociate the loue of brethren, and to break wedlock bands with such violence, that they may not be unted, & are predominant in many other dometfcall mutinies: of whom, if you lift to heare more, read the 39 of Ecclefiaſticus. The prophet Efay maketh mention of another Spirit, sent by God to the Egyptians, to make them stray and wander out of the way, that is to say, the Spirite of lying, which they call Bolychym. The spirits that entice men to gluttonie & luft, are certaine watry spirits of the Weft, and certaine Southerne spirits as Nefrach and Kelen, which for the most part prosecute vnlawfull loues, and cheriſh all vnnatural desires: they wander through lakes, fifti-ponds, and fennes, & overwhelme ships, cast boates vpon ankers, and drowne men that are swimming: therefore are they counted the moft peſtilent, troublesome, and guilefull spirits that are: for by the helpe of Alynach, a Spirit of the Weft, they will raife stormes, caufe earthquakes, whirlwindes, rayne, haile or snow in the cleereft day that is: and if euer they appeare to any man, they come in womens apparell. The spirits of the aire will mixe themſelues with thunder & lightening, and fo infect the Clyme where they raife any tempeſt, that fondonly great mortalitie fhal enfue to
the inhabitants from the infectious vapors which arise from their motions: of such S. John maketh mention in the ninth of the Apocalips; their patrone is Mereris, who beareth chief rule about the middle time of the day.

The spirits of the fire haue their mansions vnder the regions of the Moone, that whatsoeuer is committed to their charge they may there execute, as in their proper coliistorie, from whence they cannot start. The spirits of the Earth keepe, for the most part, in Forrests and woods, and doo hunters much noyance, and sometime in the broad fields, where they lead travellers out of y right way, or fright men with deformed apparitions, or make them run mad through exceffeue melancholy, like Ajax Telamonius, & so prove hurtfull to themselves, and dangerous to others: of this number the chiefe are Samaab and Achymael, spirits of the Eaft, that haue no power to doo any great harme, by reafon /of the vnconstancie of their affections. The vnder-earth spirits, are such as lurk in dens & little cauernes of the earth, and hollow creuifes of mountaines, that they may dyue into the bowels of the earth at their pleasures: these dig metals and watch treasures, which they continually transport from place to place, that none should haue vfe of them: they raise windes that vomit flames, & shake the foundation of buildings, they daunce in
rounds in pleasant Lawnds, and greene meddowes, with noyfes of musick and minstralifie, & vanish away when any comes neere them: they will take vnpon them any similitude but of a woman, and terrifie men in the likenes of dead mens ghostes in the night time: and of this qualitie & condition the Necromancers hold Gaziel, Fegor, and Anarazel, Southerne spirits, to be. Befides, there are yet remaining certaine lying spirits, who (although all bee giuen to lie by nature) yet are they more prone to that vice than the rest, being named Pythonistes, of whom Apollo comes to be called Pythaus: they haue a prince aswel as other spirits, of whom mention is made in the 3 booke of Kings, when he faith he will be a lying spirit in the mouth of all Ahab's prophets: from which those spirits of iniquitie doo little differ, which are called the vessels of wrath, that assist Belial (whom they interpret a spirite without yoake or controuler) in all damnable devise and inuentions. Plato reports them to bee such as first devised Cardes and dice, and I am in the mind, that the Monke was of the same order, that found out the use of Gunpouder, and the engines of warre thereto belonging. Those that write of these matters call this Belial Chodar of the Eaft, that hath all witches and coniurers spirits vnder his iurisdiction, & giues them leaue to helpe Juglers in their tricks,
& Simon Magus to doo miracles; alwaies provided they bring a foule home to their Master for his hyre.

Yet are not these all, for there are spirits called spies & tale-cariers, obedient to Ascaroth, whom the Greekes call Daimona, and S. John, The accuser of the brethren: also tempters, who for their interrupting vs in al our good actions are cald our euill Angels. Above all things they hate the light, and / reioyce in darknes, disquieting men maliciously in the night, & sometimes hurt them by pinching them, or blasting them as they sleepe: but they are not so much to be dreaded as other spirits, because if a man speake to them, they flee away, and will not abide. Such a spirit Plinius Secundus telleth of, that vised to haunt a goodly house in Athens that Athenodorus hired; and such another Suetonius describeth to haue long houered in Lamianus garden, where Caligula lay buried, who for because he was onely couered with a fewe clods, and vnreuerently throwne amongst the weedes, hee merueilously disturbed the owners of the garden, & would not let them rest in their beds, till by his Sifters, returned from banishment, he was taken vp, & entoombed solemnly. Pausanias avoucheth (amongst other experiments) that a certaine spirit called Zazilus doth feed vpon dead mens corfes, that are not deeply enterred as they ought:
which to confirme, there is a wonderfull accident set downe in the Danish historie of Asuitus and Asmundus, who, being two famous frends (well knownen in those parts) vowd one to another, that which of the two outlived the other, should be buried alive with his friend that first died. In short space Asuitus fell sicke and yeelded to nature: Asmundus, compelled by the oath of his friendship, took none but his horse and his dog with him, and transported the dead bodie into a vast caue vnder the earth, & ther determined (hauing victualed himselfe for a long time) to finishe his dayes in darknes, and never depart from him that he loued so dearly.

Thus shut vp, and enclosed in the bowels of the earth, it hapned Eritus, King of Sweueland, to passe that way with his armie, not full two moneths after: who coming to the toombe of Asuitus, and suspecting it a place where treasure was hidden, caused his Pioneers with their spades and mattockes to dig it vp: whereupon was discouered the loathsome body of Asmundus, al to be smeared with dead mens filth, & his visage most vgly and fearefull; which imbrued with congeald blood, and eaten and torne like a raw vlcer, made him so gaffly to behold, that all the lookers on were affrighted. He, seeing himselfe / restored to light, and so many amazed men stand about him, re-
solved their uncertaine perplexitie in these tearmes. Why stand you astonisht at my
unusual deformities? when no living man converseth with the
dead but is thus disfigured. But other causes
have effected this alteration in me: for I know
not what audacious spirit, sent by Gorgon from the
deep, hath not only most ravenously devoured my
horse and my dog, but also hath layd his hungry
pawes upon mee, and, tearing downe my cheekes
as you see, hath likewise rent away one of mine
ears. Hence it is that my mangled shape seemes
so monstrous, and my humane image obscured
with gore in this wise. Yet escaped not this fell Harpie
from me vnreuen'd: for, as he assayld me, I
raught his head from his shoulers, and sheathd
my sword in his body. Have spirits their visible
bodies, said I, that may be toucht, wounded, or
pierfit? Believe me, I never heard that in my life
before this. Why, quoth he, although in their
proper essence they are creatures incorporeal, yet
can they take vpon thee the indument of any
living body whatsoever, and transforme themselues
into all kinde of shapes, whereby they may more
easily deceuie our shallow wits and senses. So
testifies Basilius, that they can put on a materiall
forme when they lift. Socrates affirmeth that his
Daemon did oftentimes talke with him, & that he
saw & felt him many times. But Marcus Cherone-
fius (a wonderfull discouerer of Diuels) writeth, that those bodies which they assume are distin-
guisht by no difference of sex, because they are
simple, and the discernance of sex belongs to bodies
compound: yet are they flexible, motiue, and apt
for any configuration; but not al of them alike;
for the spirits of the Fire and Aire haue this power
above the rest. The spirits of the water haue flow
bodies resembling birds and women, of which kinde
the Naiades & Nereides are much celebrated amongst
Poets. Neuertheles, howeuer they are restrayned
to their feueral similitudes, it is certaine that all of
them desire no forme or figure so much, as the
likenesse of a man, & doo thinke themselues in
heauen when they are infeoft in that hue: where-
fore I know no other reason but this, that man is
the neereft representatiō to God, in so much as the
Scripture faith, He made man after his own likenesse
and image: and they affectinge, by reason of their
pride, to be as like God as they may, contend most
seriously to shroud themselues vnder that habit.

But, I pray, tell mee this, whether are there (as
Porphirius holdeth) good spirirts aswell as euill? Nay, certainly (quoth he) we are al euill, let
Porphirius, Proclus, Apuleius, or the Platonists
dispute to the contrary as long as they will: which
I will confirme to thy capacity by the names that
are euerywhere giuen vs in the Scripture: for the
diuell, which is the *Summum genus* to vs all, is called *Diabolus quasi deorsum ruens*, that is to say, falling downward, as hee that aspyring too high, was thrown from the top of felicitie to the lowest pit of despayre: and satan, that is to say, an Aduersary, who, for the corruption of his malice, opposeth himselfe euer against God, who is the chiefeft good. In *Iob Behemoth* and *Leviathan*, and in the 9. of the *Apocalsips, Apolyon*, that is to say, a Subuerter: because the foundation of those vertues, which our high Maker hath planted in our soules, hee vndermineth and subuerteth. A Serpent for his poysoning, a Lyon for his deuouring: a Furnace, for that by his malice the Elect are tried, who are vessels of wrath and saluation. In *Efsay a Syren*, a *Lamia*, a *Scrich-oule*, an *Estridge*. In the *Psalmes*, an *Adder*, a *Basiliske*, a *Dragon*. And lastly, in the *Gospel*, Mammon, Prince of this world, and the Gouernour of darknes: so that, by the whole course of condemning names that are giuen vs, and no one instance of any fauourable tytle bestowed vpon vs, I positiuely set downe that all spirits are euill. Now, whereas the Diuines attribute vnto vs these good and euill spirits, the good to guide vs from euil, and the euil to draw vs from goodnesse, they are not called spirits, but Angells, of which fort was *Raphaell*, the good Angel of *Tobias*, who exilde the euill spirit *Afmo-


Fiercely into the desert of Ägypt, that he might be the more secure from his temptation. Since we have entered thus far into the diuels commonwealth, I beseech you certify me thus much, whether have they power to hurt granted them from god or from themselves: can they hurt as much as they will? Not so, quoth hee, for although that diuells be most mightie spirites, yet can they not hurt but permisfiuelie, or by some speciall dispensation: as when a man is fallen into the state of an outlaw, the Lawe dispenfeth with them that kills him, & the Prince excludes him from the protection of a subject, so, when a man is a relaps from God and his Lawes, God withdrawes his prouidence from watching ouer him, & authorifieth the deuil, as his instrument, to assault him and torment him, so that whatsoeuer he dooth, is Limitata potestate, as one faith: insomuch as a haire cannot fall from our heads, without the will of our heauenlie Father.

The diuell could not deceiue Achabs prophets till he was licensed by God, nor exercise his tyranie ouer Job, til he had giuen him commiision, nor enter into the heard of swine, til Christ bad them goe. Therefore, need you not feare the diuell any whit, as long as you are in the fauour of God, who raineth him so straight, that except he let him loose he can doo nothing. This manlike proportion,
which I now retaine, is but a thinge of suffrance, granted vnto me to plague such men as hunt after strife, & are delighted with variance. It may be so very well, but whether haue you that skil to foretell thinges to come, that is ascribed vnto you? We haue (quoth he) sometimes: not that we are priuie to the eternall counsel of god, but for that by the sense of our ayrie bodies, we haue a more refined faculty of foreseeing, than men possibly can haue, that are chained to such heavie earthlie moulder; or els for that by the incomparable pernicitie of those ayrie bodies, we not onely outstrip the swiftnes of men, beasts and birds, wherby we may be able to attain to the knowledge of things sooner, than those that by the dulnes of their earthlie sense com a great waie behind vs. Herunto may we adioine our long experience in the course of things from the beginning of the world, which men want, and, therfore, cannot haue that deepe conieecture that we haue. Nor is our knowledge any more than conieecture: for prescience only belongeth to God, & that geffe/that we haue proceedeth from the compared disposition of heavenny and earthlie bodies, by whose long obserued temperature, we doo diuine manie times, as it happens: & therefore doo we take vpon vs to prophecy, that we may purchase estimation to our names, & bringe men in admiration with that we
do, and so be counted for Gods. The myracles wee work are partly contriued by illusion, and partly assisted by that supernatural skil we haue in the experience of nature aboue al other creatures. But against these illusions of your subtletie & vain terrors you inflict, what is our chiefe refuge? I shalbe accounted a foolish Diuel anon, if I bewray the secrets of our kingdome, as I haue begun: yet speak I no more than learned Clarkes haue written, and asmuch as they haue set downe will I shew thee.

Origin, in his treatise against Celsus, faith, there is nothing better for him that is vexed with spirits, then the naming of Iesu the true God, for he awocheth, he hath seen divers driven out of mens bodies by that meanes. Athanafius in his booke De varijs questionibus faith, The presentest remedie against the inuasion of euill spirits, is the beginning of the 67. Psalme, Exurgat Deus, & dissipentur inimici ejus. Cyprian counsels men to adjure spirits onely by the name of the true God. Some hold that fire is a preserveruitive for this purpose, because when any spirit appeareth, the lights by little and little goe out, as it were of their owne accord, and the tapers are by degrees extinguisht. Others by inuocating vpon God, by the name of Vehiculum ignis superioris, and often rehearsing the Articles of our faith. A third fort are perswaded that the
brandishing of swordes is good for this purpose, because Homer faineth, that Vlifes, sacrificing to his mother, wafted his sword in the aire to chafe the spirits from the bloude of the sacrifice. And Sybylla, conducting Aeneas to hell, begins hir charmes in this fort.

Procul, O procul, este prophani:
Tuque juvande viam, vaginaque eripe ferrum.

Philostratus reporteth, that he and his companions meeting that diucl which artifts entitle Apolonus, as they came one night from banquetting, with such termes as he is curst in / holy writ, they made him run awaie howling. Manie in this case extoll perfume of Calamentum paonia, Menta palma Chriſti, and Appius. A number prefer the carying of red Corrall about them, or of Arthemia hypericon, Ruta verbena: & to this effect manie doo vſe the jyngling of keyes, the found of the harp, and the clafhing of armor. Some of old time put great superſtitition in characters, curiously engraued in their Pentagonon, but they are all vaine, & will do no good, if they be otherwise vſed than as signes of couenaunt betweene the diuell and them. Nor doo I affirme all the rest to be vnfallible preſcriptions, though sometime they haue their vſe: but that the onelie assured waie to reſift their attempts is prayer and faith, gainſt which all the
duells in hell cannot preuaile. Inough, gentle spirit, I wil importune thee no farther, but commit this Supplication to thy care: which, if thou deliuer accordinglie, thou shalt at thy returne haue mor[e] of my custome: for by that time I wil haue finisht certain letters to diuers Orators & Poets, disperced in your dominions. That as occasion shal serue, but nowe I muft take leave of you, for it is Terme time, and I haue some busines. A Gentleman (a frend of mine, that I neuer saw before) staies for me, and is like to be vndone if I come not in to beare witnes on his side: wherefore Bazilex manus till our next meeting.

Gentle Reader, tandem aliquando I am at leasure to talke to thee. I dar say thou haft cald me a hundred times dolt for this senseles discourse: it is no matter, thou dost but as I haue done by a number in my dayes. For who can abide a scurie pedling Poet to pluck a man by the sleeve at euerie third step in Paules Churchyard, and when hee comes in to seruey his wares, theres nothing but purgations and vomits wrapt vp in waft paper. It were verie good the dogwhipper in Paules would haue a care of this in his vnfauerie visitation euerie Saterday: for it is dangerous for such of the Queenes lidge people, as shall take a viewe of them faiting.

Looke/to it, you Booksellers & Stationers, and
let not your shops be infected with anie such goose gyblets, or thinking garbadge as the Jygs of news-mongers, and especiallie such of you as frequented Westminster hall, let them be circumspect what dunghill papers they bring thither: for one bad phamphlet is inough to raise a dampe that may poyson a whole Terme, or at the leaft a number, of poore Clyents, that haue no money to prevent il aire by breaking their fafts ere they come thither. Not a base Inck-dropper, or scuruy plodder at Nouerint, but nailes his assles cares on euerie poast, & comes off with long Circumquaque to the Gentleman Readers, yea, the moft excerementary dishlickers of lerning are grown so valiant in impudence, that now they set vp their faces (like Turks) of gray paper, to be spat at for siluer games in Finshburie fields. Whilst I am thus talking, me thinkes I heare one say, What a fop is this, he entitles his Booke a Supplication to the Diuell, & doth nothing but raile on ideots, and tells a storie of the nature of spirits. Haue patience, good sir, and weele come to you by and by. Is it my Title you finde fault with? Why, haue you not seene a Towne surnamed by the principall house in the Towne, or a Noble man deriue his Baronie from a little village where he hath leaft land? So fareth it by me in christening of my booke. But some will objeect, wheretoo tends this discouerie of diuels,
or how is it induced? Forsooth, if thou wilt needs know my resoun, this it is. I bring Pierce Penileffe to question with the diuell, as a yong nouice would talke with a great trauailer, who, carying an Englishmans appetite to enquire of news, will be sure to make what use of him he may, and not leave any thing vnaskt, that he can resolue him of. If then the diuell be tedious in discoursing, impute it to Pierce Penileffe that was importunate in demanding; or if I haue not made him so secret or subtil in his art, as diuels are wont, let that of Laètantius be mine excuse, *lib 2, cap 16 de Origenis errore*, when he faith, the diuels haue no power to lie to a juft man, and if they adiuere them by the maiesty of the high God, they will not onely confesse them-selves to be Diuels, but also tel their names as they are. *Deus bone*, what a vaine am I fallen into? what, an Epistle to the Readers in the end of thy book? Out vpon thee for an arrent blocke, where learntshou fine that wit? O sir, hold your peace: a fellon neuer comes to his answere before the offence be committed. Wherefore, if I in the beginning of my Book shoulde haue come off with a long Apologie to excuse my selfe, it were all one, as if a theefe, going to steale a horfe, shoulde deuise by the waie as he went, what to speake when he came at the gallowes. Here is a crosse waie, and I thinke it good heere to part. Farwell, fare-
well, good Parenthethis, and commend me to Ladie Vanitie, thy mistres.

Now, Pierce peniles, if for a parting blow thou haft ere a tricke in thy budget more then ordinarie, bee not daintie of it, for a good patron will pay for all. I, where is he? Promissis quilibet diues esse potest. But cap and thanks is all our Courtiers payment: wherefore, I would counsell my frends to be more confiderate in their Dedications, and not caft away so many months labour vpon a clowne that knowes not how to vfe a Scholer: for what reason haue I to bestow any of my wit vpon him, that wil bestow none of his wealth vpon me. Alas, it is an easie matter for a goodlie tall fellow, that shineth in his filkes, to come and out face a poore simple Pedant in a thred bare cloak, and tell him his Booke is pretie, but at this time he is not prouided for him: marrie, about two or three daies hence if he come that waie, his Page shal say he is not within, or els he is so busie with my L. How-call-ye him, and my L. What-call-ye him, that he may not be spoken withall. These are the common courfes of the world, which every man priuatly murmurs at, but none dares openlie vpbraid, because all Artists for the moft are base minded and like the Indians, that haue store of gold & precious ftones at commad, yet are ignorant of their value, and therfore let the Spaniards, the Englishmen
and every one lode their ships with them without molestation. So they, enioyeing and poftfeling the puritie of knowledge, (a treasure farre richer than the Indian Mynes) let euery proud Thrafo be partaker of their perfeotions, repaieing them no profit: and gyld himfelfe with the titles they giue him, when he wil scarce returne them a good word for their labor: giue an Ape but a nut, and he wil looke your head for it; or a Dog a bone, and hele wag his tayle: but giue me one of my young Masters a booke, and he will put of his hat and blufh, and fo go his waie.

Yes, now I remember me, I lie; for I know him that had thankes for three yeares worke, and a Gentleman that beftowed much cost in refining of musicke, & had scarce Fidlers wages for his labor. We want an Aretine here among vs, that might ftrip these golden affes out of their gay trappings, and after he had ridden them to death with railing, leaue them on the dunghil for carion. But I will write to his ghoft by my carrier, & I hope he repare his whip, and vfe it againft our Englih Peacockes, that painting themfelves with Church spoiles, like mightie mens fepulchers, haue nothing but Atheifme, fchifme, hypocrifie, and vainglorie, like rotten bones lie lurking within them. O how my foule abhors these buckram giants, that hauing an outward face of honor fet vpon them by flat-
terers & parasites, haue their inward thoughts ftuft with straw and fethers, if they were narrowlie sifted.

Farre be it, bright ftarres of Nobilitie, and gliſtring Attendaunts on the true Diana, that this my speach shoulde be anie way injurious to your glorious magnificence: for in you liue those sparkes of Augustus liberalitie, that never sent any away emptie: and Science feauenfold throne, welnigh ruined by ryot and avarice, is mightely supported by your plentifull larges, which makes Poets to finge fuch goodlie Himnes of your praife, as no enuous pofteritie may forget. But from generall fame, let me digres to my priuate experience, and with a tongue vnworthie to name a name of fuch worthiness, affectionately emblazon to the eyes that wonder, the matchles Image of Honor, & magni-
cent rewarder of vertue, Ioues eagle-borne Ganime, thrice noble Amintas. In whose high spirit, fuch a Deitie of wisdome appeareth, that if Homer were to write his Odyfsea new, (where, vnder the perfon of Vlyfes, hee describeth a fingular man of perfection, in whome all ornaments both of peace / and war are assembled in the height of their excelence) he need no other inſtance to augment his conceipt, than the rare carriage of his honorable minde. Many writers and good wits, are giuen to com-
mend their patrons and Benefactors, some for
prowesse, some for policie, others for the glorie of their Ancestrie and exceeding bountie and liberalitie: but if my vnable pen shouleuer entreprise such a continuatie taske of praise, I woulde embowell a number of those windpuff bladders, and disfurnish their bald pates of the perriwigs Poets haue lent them, that so I might restore glorie to his right inheritance, and these stoln Titles to their true owners: which, if it would so fall out, (as time maie worke all things) the aspiring nettles, with their shadie topes, shal no longer ouer-dreep the best hearbs, or keep them from the smiling aspect of the Sunn, that liue & thrive by comfortable beames. None but Desert shoule fit in Fames grace, none but Hector be remembred in the chronicles of Prowesse, none but thou, most courteous Amyntas, be the seconde musicall argument of the knight of the Red-crosse.

Oh decus atque ævi gloria summa tui.

And heere (heauenly Spencer) I am moft highlie to accuse thee of forgetfulnes, that in that honourable Catalogue of our English heroes, which infueth the conclusion of thy famous Fairie Queene, thou wouldst let so speciall a Piller of Nobilitie passe vnfaluted. The verie thought of his farre deriued discent, and extraordinarie parts, wherewith hee attaineth the world, and drawes all hearts to his
loue, woulde haue inspired thy forewearied Muse with new furie to proceede to the next triumphs of thy statelie Goddesse: but as I, in fauor of so rare a scholler, suppose with this counfaile he refrained his mention in this first part, that hee might with full faile proceede to his due commendations in the second. Of this occasion long since I happened to frame a Sonnet, which, being wholie intended to the reuerence of this renoumed Lord (to whom I owe all the vtmoste powers of my loue and dutie) I meant heere for variety of stile to infert.

Peru / fing yeſternight, with idle eyes,
The Fairy Singers stately tuned verse:
And viewing after Chap-mens wonted guise,
What strange contents the title did rehearse.
I streaight leapt ouer to the latter end,
Where like the queint Comædians of our time
That when their Play is doone do fall to ryme,
I found short lines, to sundry Nobles pend.
Whom he as speciall Mirrors singled fourth,
To be the Patrons of his Poetry;
I read them all, and reuerenc't their worth,
Yet wondred he left out thy memory.

But therefore geft I he suppreft thy name,
Because few words might not coprife thy fame.

Beare with me gentle Poet, though I conceiue not aright of thy purpose, or be too inquisitive into
the intent of thy obliuion: for, how euer my con-
icecture may misle the cushion, yet shall my speech
faour of friendship, though it be not alied to
judgement.

_Tantum hoc molior_, in this short digression, to
acquaint our countrymen, that liue out of the
Eccho of the Courte, with a common knowledge
of his invaluabell vertues, and shew my selfe thank-
full (in some part) for benefits receiued: which
since words may not counterraile, that are the
vful lip-labour of euerie idle discourses, I conclude
with that of _Ouid_:

_Accipe per longos tibi qui deseruit annos,_
_Accipe qui pura novit amare fide._

And if my zeale and dutie (though all to meane
to please) may by any induftry, be reformed to
your gratious liking, I submit the simplicitie of my
endeuours to your service, which is all my per-
formance may profer, or my ability performe.

_Præbeat Alcinoi poma benignus ager,_
_Officium pauper numeret studiumque fidemque._

And so I breake off this endlesse argument of
speeche abruptlie.

FINIS.
APPENDIX NOTE.

Agreeably to promise in Note prefixed to 'Pierce Penileffe' (page 2), I place here the more noticeable 'faults' of the Jhones edition, as it is represented in the late Mr. J. Payne Collier's reproduction for the 'Shakespeare Society' (1842). It would have been easy to have multiplied these 'faults'—against which Nashe himself wrote vehemently—but those recorded may be accepted as at once fairly representative and showing the advantage of taking for text the Author's own edition of 1592.

Page 9, line 20, 'milder' misprinted 'milde.'
'' 11, 20, 'whipt out' misprinted 'whipt.'
'' 19, 26, 'thinke you could' (dropped).
'' 26, 26, 'Earle' misprinted 'carle.'
'' 27, 11, 'Lady Swin-fnout' misprinted 'Ladie Manibetter.'
'' 28, 26, 'a cornfull melancholy... course &.. ' misprinted 'melancholike course in his gate and countenance.'
'' 29, 17, 'vnthriftes' misprinted 'outhrifts.'
'' 34, 3, 'cafe' misprinted 'eafe.'
'' 34, 7, 'finers' misprinted 'finders.'
'' 35, 2, 'a paire of shoos and a Canuas-dublet' misprinted 'a scholler bread and cheese.'
'' 35, 5, 'obiect' misprinted 'abiet' [but query ?].
'' 35, 14, 'Raynard' misprinted 'Raynold.'
'' 38, 15, 'then a flab' misprinted 'then the flab.'
'' 39, 17, 'thrumd' misprinted 'thumb.'
'' 39, 22, 'flaut' misprinted 'puft.'
'' 45, 4, 'Troy nouant' misprinted 'Troy nouant.'
'' 45, 12, 'furious' misprinted 'furies.'
'' 45, 16, 'furde' misprinted 'furre.'
APPENDIX NOTE.

Page 46, line 27, 'guegawes' misprinted 'jymiams' (and a nonsensical note on it).

,, 50, last line, 'euey' misprinted 'anie.'
,, 57, line 1, 'loft his maister' misprinted 'runnes after.'
,, 57, ,, 5, 'vaine' misprinted 'traine,'
,, 57, ,, 7, 'thoſe' misprinted 'Them.'
,, 73, ,, 8, 'eater' misprinted 'cater.'
,, 78, ,, 3, 'from Gentlemen' (dropped).
,, 83, ,, 21, 'Proui[de]nce' misprinted 'Prouince' (in both).
,, 87, ,, 11, 'yt' (dropped).
,, 88, ,, 7, 'howfoener' misprinted 'howeuer.'
,, 89, ,, 15, 'immoralitie' misprinted 'immoralitie.'
,, 92, ,, 17, 'Players' misprinted 'playes.'
,, 92, ,, 23, 'euer' misprinted 'euen.'
,, 101, ,, 11, 'Pullerie' misprinted 'puiterie.'
,, 105, ,, 3, 'impudence' misprinted 'impudence.'
,, 118, ,, 21, 'unruerently' misprinted 'unreently.'
,, 125, ,, 5, 'illusions' misprinted 'allusions.'
,, 128, ,, 10, 'Inck-dropper' misprinted 'Jack-dropper.'
,, 128, ,, 11, 'nailes' misprinted 'vailes.'
,, 128, ,, 13, 'difli-lickers' misprinted 'dilickers.'
,, 129, ,, 14, 'adiure' misprinted 'abjure.'
,, 129, ,, 21, 'fellon' misprinted 'fellow.'
,, 130, ,, 25, 'shineth' misprinted 'shines.'
,, 130, ,, 25, 'becaufe all artifts for the moft part' misprinted 'becaufe the moft artifts.'
,, 131, ,, 26, 'he' (dropped).
,, 132, ,, 16, 'that' misprinted 'of.'

On the other hand, it is due to the Jhones edition to acknowledge severall correct readings in single words as against incorrect in our '92 text, e.g. 'fhape' for 'flame' (p. 19, l. 24), 'this' for 'thus' (p. 30, l. 17), 'yeomen' for 'yeoman' (p. 45, l. 18), 'juice' for 'juftice' (p. 60, l. 2).

A. B. G.
VII.

HARVEY-GREENE TRACTATES.

I. A WONDERFULL STRANGE AND MIRACULOUS ASTROLOGICALL PROGNOSTICATION, etc.

1591-2.
NOTE.

For the 'Wonderful Strange and Miraculous Astrological Prognostication' I am indebted to the Bodleian. See Memorial-Introduction—Biographical, in Vol. I., and 'Critical' in Vol. IV.—on it, and other related publications.—A. B. G.
A Wonderfull
strange and miraculous, Astro-
logicall Prognostication for
this yeer of our Lord God.
1591.

Discouering such wonders to
happen this yeere, as neuer chaunced
since Noes floud.

Wherein if there be found one lye,
the Author will loose his credit
for euer.

By Adam Fouleweather, Student
in Asse-tronomy.

Imprinted at London by Thomas
Scarlet.
(1591.)
To the Readers health.

Itting Gentlemen vpon Douer cliffs, to quaint my selfe with the art of Navigati̇on, and knowe the course of the Tides, as the Danske Crowes gather on the Sandes against a storme: so there appeared on the downs such a flock of knaues, that by Astrological conjectures I began to gather, that this yeere would prove intemperate by an extreme heat in Sōmer, insomuch that the stones in Cheap side should be so hot, that divers persons should feare to goe from Poules to the Counter in the Poultry: whereupon I betook me to my Ephimerides, and erecting a figure, haue found such strange accidents to fall out this yeere, Mercury being Lord and predominate in the house of Fortune, that many fooles shall haue full cofers, and wise men walke vp and downe with empty pursies: that if Jupiter were not ioyned with him in a fauourable aspect, the Butchers / of Eaſt-cheape shoule doo little or nothing all Lent but make prickes: seeing
therefore the wonders that are like to fall out this present yeere, I haue for the benefit of my Countrymen taken in hand to make this Prognostication, discoursing breefelye of the Eclipses both of Sunne and Moone, with their dangerous effectes like to followe, which if God preuent not: many poore men are like to fast on Sondaiies for want of food, and such as haue no shoos to goe barefoot, if certaine deuout Coblers proue not the more curteous: but yet Astrologie is not so certaine, but it may fayle: and thersore divers Hostesses shal chaulke more this yeere then their Guests wil wipe out: So that I conclude, whatsoeuer is saide by art. *Sapiens dominabitur astra.*

Your freend and Student in Asle-trologie.

*Adam Foulleweather.*
Of the Eclipses
that shall happen this present
yeere, to the great and fear-
full terrifying of the
beholders.

F we may credit the authentickal
censures of Albumazan and Ptol-
omy, about the motions of cele-
tiall bodies, whose influence dooth
exitat and procure continuall mu-
tability in the lower region: we shal finde þ the
Moon this yeere shall be eclipsed, which shall
happen in one of þ 12. moneths, & some of the
foure / quarters of the yeere, whose pointes as
they shall be totalye darkened, so the effectes
shall be wondrous and strange. For Cancer being
the sole house of the Moone, dooth presage that
this yeere fruits shall be greatly eaten with Catt-
terpillers: as Brokers, Farmers, and Flatterers,
which feeding on the sweate of other mens browes, shall greatlye hinder the beautye of the spring, and disparage the growth of all hotteft hearbes, vnlesse some northerly winde of Gods vengace cleere the trees of such Catterpillers, with a hotte plague and the pestilence: but Cancer being a watrie signe and cheefe gouernour of fiouds and streams, it foresheweth that Fishmongers if they be not well lookt to, shall goe downe as farre as Graues end in Wherries and forestall the market, to the great preiudice of the poore, that all Lent ground their fare on the benefit of Salte fishe and red herring: besides it signifieth that Brewers shal make hauocke of Theames water, and put more liquour then they were accustomed amongst their Maulte: to the overthrowe of certain crazed Ale knights, whose morning draughtes of strong Beere is a great staye to their stomacks: a lamentable case if it be not lookt into and prevented by some speedye supplication to the woorshipfull order of ale cunners. But in this we haue great hope that because the effects cannot surpripe the cause, divers Tapsters shal trust out more then they can get in: and although they fill their Pots but halfe full, yet for want of true dealing die in the Brewers debt.

Thus much for the watry signe of Cancer, and because this Eclipfe is little visible in our horizon,
A PROGNOSTICATION.

I passe it ower with this prouiso to all seafaring men, to cary more shirts then one with them a ship boord, left to their great labor they spend many houres in murthering their vermin on the hatches.

The Eclipse of the Sunne.

The Eclipse of the Sun according to Proclus opinion is like to produce many hot and pestilent infirmities, especiallie amongst Sumners and Pettifoggers, whose faces being combusted with many fiery inflamatiues shall shew y dearth, that by their devout drinking is like to ensue of Barly, if violent death take not away such consuming mault worms: diuers are like to be troubled with such hotte rewmes in their heads, that their haire shall fall off: and such hot agues shall raigne this yeere, with strange feuers and calamities, that /if the Sunne were not placed in a colde signe, Renish wine would rife to ten pence a quarte before the latter end of August: but diuers good Planets being retrograde, foretelleth that Lemmans this yeere shalbe plenty, insomuch that many shall use them to bedward, for the quallifying of their hot and inflamed stomackes. And Mars being placed neere vnto the Sunne sheweth that there shalbe a great death among people: olde women that can
lieue no longer shall dye for age: and yong men that haue Vlurers to their father, shal this yeer haue great caufe to laugh, for the Deuill hath made a decree, that after they are once in hell, they shal never rise againe to trouble their exe- cutors: Beside that by all coniecturall argumentes the influence of Mars shall be so violent, that divers fouldiers in partes beyond the feas, shall fall out for want of their paye, and heere in our meridionall clyme, great quarrelles shall be raised between man and man, especialy in cases of Law: gentry shal goe checkmate with Iustice, and coyne out countenance ofttimes equitie: the poore sitting on pennyleffe benche, shal fell their Coates to friue for a strawe, and Lawyers laugh such fooles to scorne as cannot keep their crownes in their pursles.

Further, there is like to be great falling out amongft Church men and certaine fond sects of religion like to trouble the commons: selfe conceipters and over holy counterfeites that delight in singularitie, shal rise vp and despise authoritie, presuming euen to abuse the higher powers, if Saturne with a frowning influence, did not threaten them with Tibornes consequence. But whereas the Sun is darkned but by digits, and that vpon y south points, it presageth great miseries to Spain and those Southerly Countries: Friers and Monks
A PROGNOSTICATION.

If hal heat them so this yeer with confessing of Harlots, that their crownes shall wax balde of the one accord, to the great impooverishing of the Spanish Barbers: Surgeons in Spain shall wax rich, and their Hospitals poore: such a pestilent mortallitie is like to fall amongst those hipocritical massacremongers. The Dukes, Marquessses & Counties shall haue their doublets closed with such Spanish buttons, that they shall neuer proue good quiresters, for the hotte and inflamed rewmes fallen down into their throats: It is further to be feared, that because the Eclipse hapneth in Iulye, there will through the extrem heat grow such abundance of Fleas, that women shall not goe to bed before twelue a clocke at night, for the great murthers and stratagems they are like to commit vpon those little animalls.

And whereas this Eclipse falleth out at three of the clocke in the afternoone, it foresheweth that manye shall goe soberer into Tauernes then they shall come out: and that he which drinkes hard and lyes cold, shall neuer dye of the sweate, although Gemini combupt and retrograd[er]e, sheweth that some shall haue so sore a sweating, that they may sell their haire by the pound to stuffe Tennice balles: but if the Beadelles of Bridewell be carefull this Summer, it may be hoped that Peticote lane may be leffe pestered with ill aires then it was woont:
and the houses there so cleere clensed, that honest women may dwell there without any dread of the whip and the cart: and I finde that the altitude of that place and of Shordich are all one elevated, and 2 degrees, and under the zenith or vertical point of Venus, which presageth that sundry sorts of men and women shall be there resident: some shalbe so short heeld & so queffe stomackt that they shal ly in their beds while noon, by which means they shal grow so ful of grosse humors, that they shalbe troubled with strange timpanies & swellings in their bellies, incurable for fortye weekes vntill they be helped by the aduice of some skilfull Midwife.

Besides, other of the same sex and faction, shall learn to cosin young nouices, and fetch in young Gentlemen, to the great ouerthrow of youth, if some sharpe and speedy redresse be not fetcht from the woorshipfull Colledge of the Phisitians in the parrish of S. Brides. But heere by the waye gentle Reader, note that this Eclipse sheweth, that this yeer shall be some strange birthes of Children produced in some monstrous forme, to the greefe of the Parentes, and fearefull spectacke of the beholders: but because the Eclipse chaunseth Southerlye, it is little to be feared that the effectes shal fall in England: yet somewhat it is to bee doubted, that diuers Children shall be borne, that
when they come to age shall not knowe their owne Fathers: others shall have their fingers of [t]he nature of Lyme twigges, to get most parte of their liuing with fiue and a reache: some shall be born with feet like vnto Hares, that they shall run so swift, that they shall never tarry with maister, but trudge from poste to piller, till they take vp beggars bush for their lodging: Others shall have Nooses like Swine, that there shall not be a feast within a myle, but they shall smell it out: But especiallye it is to be doubted, that diuers women this yeere shall bee borne with two tungs, to the terrible greefe of such as shall marry them, uttering/in their furye such rough caft eloquence, that knaue and slaue shalbe but holyday woords to their husbands. And whereas this fearefull Eclipse dooth continue but an houre and a halfe, it signifieth that this yeere womens loue to their husbands shall be very shorte, some so momentarye, that it shall scarfe continue from the Church doore to the wedding house: and that Hennes, Capons, Geefe, and other pullin shall little haunt poore mens tables, but flye awaye with spittes in their bellies to fatte Churilhes houses, that pamper themselues vp with delicates and dainties: although very fewe other effectes are to be prognosticated, yet let me giue this caueat to my Countrymen, as a clause to this wonderfull Eclipse. Let such as
haue clothes enow, keep themselues warme from taking of colde: and I would wishe rich men all this winter to sit by a good fire, and hardlye to goe to bed without a Cuppe of Sack, and that so qualified with Suger, that they proue not rew-matick: let them feede daintilye and take eafe enough, and no doubt according to the judgement of Albumazar, they are like to liue as long as they can, and not to dye one hower before their time.

Thus much for this strange Eclipse of the Sunne.
Of the second Eclipse of the Moon, which is like to fall out when it chance either before the 31. of December or els not at all, this present yeere.

1591.

The second Eclipse of the Moon shalbe but little seen in England, whereupon the effectes shall be nothing prejuditial to our clime: yet as the bodye of the Moone is never obscure in part or in whole, but some dangerous euents doo followe: so I meane to set downe breefely what is to be lookte for in these westerne partes of the worlde.

First therefore it is to bee feared, that the Danes shal this yeere bee greatly giuen to drincke, insomuch that English Beere shal there be worthe fiue pence a stoape, that their Hoffes and tappe houses shall be more frequented, then the Parishe Churches, and many shall haue more Spruce Beere in their bellies, then wit in their
heads: wherevpon shall / growe Apoplexies and colde palsies in their legges, that they shall diuers times not bee able to stand on their feete. Vpon this shall growe great commoditye to the Potters and Glaffe makers, for it is like there shall be a great ouerthrowe of them, if there bee not some act made for drinking in Jacke Jackes. But if the weather prooue feasonable, and the Haruest great, and the Barnes full of Corne: Rye is like to be cheap in Denmarke, and bread to be of a reasonable size, for the releuuing of the poore. Mary, Fraunce is like to haue a great dearth of honest men, if the king preuaile not against these mutenous Rebelles of the League, and Papists in diuers places to be plentye, if God or the King rout them not out with a sharpe ouerthrow: But this hope we haue against that rascall rabble of those shavelings, that there was found in an olde booke this Prophecie spoken about Jerufalem long since by a Jew: The tree that God hath not planted shall be pulled vp by the roots: some curious Astronomers of late dayes that are more Propheticall then Juditiall, affirme that Martin the kill-hog for his devout drincking (by the Pope canonized a Saint) shall rise againe in the apparell of a Minister, and tickle some of the baser forte with such lufty humors in their braines, that / diuers selfe con-
ceited fooles shall become his disciples, and grounding their witlesse opinion on an hereticall foundation, shall seeke to ruinate authority, and peruerd all good orders establised in the Church, to the great prejudice of unity and religion, tituling theseelues by the names of Martinistes, as the Donatists grew from Donates: were it not that the Moone being in Taurus, which gouernes the neck and throat, shewes that the Squinancie shall raigne amongst them, and diuers for want of breath dye of the strangling. Now for that Capricornus is a signe wherein Luna is often resident, it prognosticateth a great death amongst hornde beasts. The Butchers shall commit wilfull murther vpon Sheepe and Oxen, and diuers Keepers kill store of Buckes, and referue no other fees to their selues but the hornes, info-muche that if the Person of Horne-Church in Essex take not heede, there maye hap to prooue this yeere some Cuckoldes in his Parrish.

But there is like to bee concluded by an act set downe in Graues ende Barge, that hee that wypes his Nose and hath it not, shall forfeite his whole face, and that all such as are iealous over their wiuies without cause, are worthie to bee punisht with the horne plague for their labour. And whereas this Eclipse is farre from the signe Pisces, it shewes that there shall bee
much stinking fish this yere at Billings gate, and that Quinborowe oyster boates shall ofte times carrie knaues as wel as honest men: but let the Fish-wiues take heed, for if most of them prove not scoldes, yet because Pisces is a signe that gouernes the feete, they shall weare out more shooes in Lent then in anie two months beside through the whole yeere, and get their living by walking and crying, because they flaundered Ram alley with such a tragical infamie. The rest I conceale as friulous, and little necessarie to be touched in this Prognostication.

A declaration of the generall disposition of sundrie conceited qualities incident unto mens minde & natures throughout these foure quarters of the yere, by the merrie influence of the Planets, with some other tragical events and observations worthie the noting, contayned under each seperated revolution.

And first of the inclination of the Winter quarter.

Winter / the first Astronomicall quarter of the yeare, according to my usuall account, whatsoever Ptolomie says, beginneth sooner with poore men than with rich, graunted so by the malignant influence of Saturne, whose constellation is that suche as haue no money nor credit, shall want
coles & woode, and be faine to stand and starue for colde, while olde pennifathers fit and waft them fefues by the fire. The winter beginning at that instant, when the Sunne makes his en- vraunce into the firit degree of Capricornus, that Hiemall foflificial signe fhowes that by naturall inclination this quarter is generally fleugmatike, and that all shall be of suche great authoritie, that the Bakers Basket shall giue the wall vnsto the Brewers Barrell, and a halfe pennye drie doe homage vnsto a halfe pennye wet. The weather and feafon being fo colde that diuerfe for feare of the froft shall fit all daye at Tables and Cardes, while their poore wiues and families faft at home for their follies. And in respect that I finde three of the feauen Planetes to be in waterie signes as Juppiter, Mars, and the Moone, it signifieth that diuerfe persons both men and women for want of wine or strong drinke shall goe to bedde fober againft their willes. That Sea-faring men shall haue ill lucke if /either their shippes hit agaynft rockes or ficke in the fandes, that there shall bee fuch great hoarie frofte, that men and women fhall creepe to bedde together, and fome of them lie fo long till they bee fetchte out with a Bafon. Heere Saturne retrograde in Gemini, fhowes that there fhall this Winter fall fuch great fogs and mifts, that diuerfe riche men fhall loofe their
purses by the high waie side, and poore men be so weather beaten by the crafte of vfurers, that they shall begge their bread by the extremitie of such extortion: but Mercurie and Venus being congregated in Sagitarie, prognosticateth that for want of faire weather, such as haue but one shirt shall go woolward till that be a washing, and that water-men that want fares shall fit and blowe their fingers till theyr fellowes row betwixte the old Swanne and Westminister. And by reason that Mars that malignant Planet, hath nothing to doe in that Hiemall revolution, fouldiers this Winter for the most parte, shall lie still in garrisons, and shall not be troubled with more monie than is necessarie. Beeing also greatly to bee feared, that through the extreme colde diuerse poore men shall die at riche mennes doores: pittie shall bee exiled, good woorkes trufl ouer the sea with Jacke / a lent and Hospitalitie banisht as a signe of popish religiion: and were it not that some moist shoures shal moderate the hardnes of the froft, Charitie should for want of house roome lie and freeze to death in the streets: diuerse great stormes are this yere to be feared, especially in houses where the wiues weare the breeches, with such lowde windes, that the women shall scolde their husbandes quight out of doores, wherevpon is like to fall great haile-stones as bigge as iyond flooles, that some shall
A PROGNOSTICATION.

haue their heads broken: and all through the froward disposition of Venus. But Mars comes in and playes the man, who beeing placed in Gemini, that gouerns armes and shoulders, pre-sageth that sundrie tall fellowes shall take heart at grassfe, who armed with good cudgels, shall so lambeake these stubborne huswiues, that the wind shall turne into another quarter, and so the weather waxe more calme and quiet. Such greate floudes are like to infue, through this Hiemall distemperature, that diuerse men shal be drowned on drie hilles, and fishe if they could not swimme, were vterly like to perish. Eeles are like to bee deere if there bee few or none taken, and plentie of poutes to bee had in all places, especiallie in those coastes and Countries where weomen haue not their owne willes. Nowe Gentle Reader in respect of diuerse particular circumstances, drawne from the daily motions, progressions, stations, retrogradations, aspecks, and other appointmentes of fixed and wandring stars, I am induced to set downe that such as haue no fire, shall feele most cold, and that wierdrawers, if they plye not their worke, shall feele no great heate, that they in Russia shal suffer more preiudice by the sharpeneffe of Winter than the Spaniards: and yet one thing is to bee hoped for at the handes of Mercurie, that this winter mony shal haue
a fall, for Philip and Mary shillings that heretofore went for 12d. shall now passe from man to man for 6d. a pence.

The distemperance of this quarter, is like to breede many sickenesles and sundrie diseases as well in young as in old, proceeding either of corrupt and vicious bloud or of superabundance of crude and raw fleugmatike humors. As Cephalagens or paines in the head, which shall make men dizzy that some shall stagger & stumble vp & downe the streetes till they have stolne a nappe to quiet their braines. Ach in the shoulders shal raine amongst divers women that haue shrewes to their husbands, and divers drunken men shall be pestured with surfets. Maidens this winter shall haue strange stitches & gripings / of the collicke, which diseases proceed by too much lying vpright: and men shall be troubled with such paine in the eies, that they shall not know their owne wiuues from other women, with coughs, rumes, and itchings, which I omit.

Of the Spring time.

Winter being finished with the last grade of the watry signe Pisces, at the Suns joyful progress into the first degree of Aries. The second quarter of our usuall yere commonly called the spring cömeth next, which beginneth when graffe begins
to sproute, & trees to bud. But to treat of this present season, forasmuch as I find the planets to be contradictorily disposed, in signs & manfios of diuerse & repugnant qualities, I gather that this spring will be very il for schollers, for they shall studie much and gain little, they shall haue more wit in their heads then money in their purses, dunces shall prove more welthie then diuers doctors, insomuch that sundrie vnlettered fooles should creep into the ministerie, if the prouident care of good Bishops did not preuent the. And by the opinion of Proclus, women are like to grow wilful, & so variable, that they shall laugh & weepe, and all with a winde: Butchers shall sell / their meate as deare as they can, and if they be not carefull, borne beastes shall bee hurtfull vnto them, and some shall bee so wedded to swines flesh, that they shall neuer be without a sowe in their house as long as they live. This spring, or vernall resolution being naturally hot and moist, is like to be verie forwarde for sprouting fieldes and blooming trees, and because Saturne is in his proper mansion, olde men are like to bee froward, and craftie knaues shall neede no Brokers, vfurie shalbe called good husbandrie, and men shalbe counted honest by their wealth, not by their vertues. And because Aquarius has somthing to do w this quarter, it
is to be doubted that divers springs of water will rise vp in vintners sellers, to the great weakning of their Gascon wine, & the utter ruine of the ancient order of the redde noses. March Beere shalbe more esteemed than small Ale.

Out of the old stocke of herezie, this spring it is to be feared, will bloome new scismaticall opinions and strange sects, as Brownists, Barowists, & such balductum deuises, to the great hinderance of the vnitie of the Church, & confusion of the true faith, if the learned doctor sir T. Tiburne be not taftte to confute such vpstart companions, with his plain & dunstable philopohie. Cancer is bu/fee in this springtide, and therefore it is like that florishing bloomes of yong gentlemens youth, shalbe greatly anoid with caterpillers, who shall intangle them in such Statutes & recognances, that they shall cry out against brokers, as Jeremy did against false prophets. Besides, thogh this last winter nipt vp divers masterles men & cut purses, yet this spring is like to afford one every tearme this ten yere in Westminster hall: Barbers if they haue no worke are like to grow poore, and for that Mercury is cobult and many quarelles like to growe amongst men, lawiers shall proue rich & weare side gowns and large consciences, hausing their mouths open to call for fees, and their purses shut when they shoulde bestowe almes.
But take heed O you generation of wicked Oftlers, that steale haie in the night from gentle-mens horses, and rub their teth with tallow, that they may eate little when they stand at liuery, this I prognosticate against you, that this spring, which so euer of you dies, shall leave a knaues carcasse in the graue behind him, and that they which liue shall hop a harlot in his clothes all the yere after. But aboue all let me not hide this secret from my countrymen, that Jupiter being in aspect with Luna, discouereth that divers men shal drinke more the they bleed, & Tailers shall steale nothing but what is brought vnto them, that poulters shall bee pestered with rotten egs, & Butchers dogs make libels against Lent, that affoordes no foode but herring cobs for their diet.

Diseases incident to this quarter, as by Astro-logicall & philosophicall conjectures I can gather, are these following: Prentifes that haue ben fore beaten, shall be troubled with ach in their armes, and it shall be ill for such as haue fore eies, to looke against the Sun. The plague shall raigne mortally amongst poore men, that divers of them shal not be able to change a man a groate. Olde women that haue taken great colde, may perhaps be trobled with the cough, and such as haue paine in their teeth, shall bee
A PROGNOSTICATION.

grievouslie troubled with the tooth aching. Befide, fickle folk shall have worse stomackes then they which be whole, and men that cannot sleepe, shall take verie little rest: with other accidentall infirmities, which I doe ouerpassae.

A declaration of the disposition and inclination of the Summer quarter.

When the Sunne hath made his course through the vernal signs, Aries, Taurus & Gemini at his paffage vnto the solficiall estiuall signe Cancer. The third parte of an English yeere called Summer, taketh his beginning this yere: as Ptolomie sayth, the twelfth of Iune, but as my skill doth conjecture, it beginneth when the wether waxeth so hot, that beggers scorne barnes and lie in the field for heate and the wormes of Saint Pancredge Church build their bowers vnder the shadow of Colman hedge. The predominant qualities of this quarter is heate and dryness, whereby I doe gather, that through the influence of Cancer, bottle Ale shall be in great authoritie, and wheat shall doe knightes service vnto malte. Tapsters this quarter shall be in greater credite than Coblers, and many shall drinke more then they can yearne. And yet because Mercurie is a signe that is nowe predominant, women shall be more troubled with fleas then men, and such as want
meate shall goe supperlesse to bedde. Besides, this quarter great hurlie burlies are like to bee feared, and greate stratagems like to bee performed, thorough the opposition of Mars and Saturne: for Butchers are like to make great hauocke amongst flies, and beggers on Sunne shine dayes to commit great murtheres vpon their rebellious vermine, and the knights of Coppersmiths hap to/doo great deedes of armes vpon Cuppes, Cannes, pots, glasse, and black jacks: not ceasing the skirmish til they are able to stand on their legges.

Further it is to bee doubted, that because Venus is in the house of Loue, that Millers, Weauers, and Taylors shall be counted as theeuishe as they are knauishe: and Maides this quarter shall make silyebubbes for their Louers, till some of them Calue with the Cowe for companye. But Jupiter in his exaltation presageth, that divers young Gentlemen shall creepe further into the Mercers Booke in a Moneth, then they can get out in a yere: and that sundry fellowes in their filkes shall be appointed to keep Duke Humfrye company in Poules, because they know not wher to get their dinner abroad: if there be great plenty of Cherries this Summer, they are like to come to a penny the pound, and Costardmongers this Summer shall be licent by the Wardens of their hall, to weare and
carry baskets of Apples on their heads to keep them from the heat of the Sun. But Libra adult and retrograde, foretelleth that there is like to be a league between divers bakers & the pillorye, for making their bread so light, and the Sun shall be so hotte, that it shall melt awaye the consciences of divers covetous men, and that / by the means of Venus which is in the house of Scorpion, women shall bee so love sicke, that Sumners and civil lawyers shall haue great fees thorough the abundance of such sinfull clients, and divers spirits in white sheetes shall stand in Poules and other Churches, to make their confessions. But this by the waie learne of me, homakers shall prove so proud, that they shall refuse the name of souters, and the Tailer and the louse are like to fall at martall variance, were it not the worshipfull company of the Botchers haue set downe this order, that he that lies in his bed while his clothes be mending, neede not haue a man to keepe his wardrope. But amongst all, the Smithes haue put vp a supplication to the Alecunners, that he which goes dronke to bed, and as soone as hee wakes dares not carouse a hartie draught the next morning, shall drinke two daies together smale Ale for his penance.

This variable season is like to bring variable accidents, for divers diseases which will much
molest the people, namely the plurisies which shall grieue many, that they shall haue farre more knauerie than they haue honestie, diuerse fluxes, and especiallie in poore mens purses, for they shall bee so laxatiae, that money shall runne out faster then they can get it. The small pockes among children and great amongst men, infirmities in the tong, some shall doe nothing but lie with others, which I let pas.

A declaration of the inclination and disposition of the Autumnall or haruest quarter.

Haruest and the laft quarter of this yeere beginneth, as I coniecture, when corne is ripe. But for the nature of this autumnall resolution, because it beginneth in Libra I gather there shall be more holes open this quarter then in all the yeere beside, and strange euents shall chance, for knaues shall weare smockes, and women shall haue holes in their heartes, that as fast as loue creepes in at one, it shall runne out at another. Yet Leo being a firie signe, foresheweth that diuerse men shall haue their teeth longer then their beards, and some shal be so Sun burnt with fitting in the Alehouse, that their noses shall bee able to light a candle. Others shall for want of money paune their clokes, and march mannerly in their
doublet and their hose. And some shall this yere haue barnes and yet want corn to put in them. Rie this yeere shall bee common in / England, and knaues shall be licenst to sel it by the pound, and he that wil not this quarter spend a penny with his friende, by the counsayle of Albumazar, shall bee thurst quite out of all good companie for his labour.

It may be doubted that some straunge sicknesse and vnknownen diseaues wil happen, as hollownesse of the heart, that a man shall not know a knaue from an honest man, and vncoouth consumptions of the lyuer, that divers men of good wealth shall by their kinde hearts spend all and die banquerouts: some shal be troubled with diseaues in the throate, which cannot bee helpte without Bull the hang man plaie the skilfull Chyrurgion. Amongest the rest, many that haue faire wiues shalbe troubled with greate swelling in the browes, a diseaue as incurable as the goute. Some shall bee troubled with the stone, and seeke to cunning women to cure them of that diseaue, an infirmitie easilie amended, and the doctors of Bridewell did not punish such women Phisitians by a Statute. But the greatest diseaue that is to bee feared, is the Cataphalufie, that is to saie, good fellowes this yeere for want of money shall oft times be contented to part companie.
A PROGNOSTICATION. 169

And / thus (gentle reader) thou haft my pro-
gnosticacion, gathered by arte, and confir-
med by experience, and therefore take it
in good worth, for Quod gra-
tis grate, and fo
farewell.

FINIS.
VIII.

HARVEY-GREENE TRACTATES.

ii. Strange Newes, etc.

1593.
NOTE.

Mr. J. Payne Collier's reprint of "Strange Newes" (1592-3) swarms with errors. His Copyist must have served him unusually badly. Our exemplar is from the Huth Library: 45 leaves unpaged, A 2—M 2.—G.
Strange Newes,
Of the intercept-
ing certaine Letters, and a Con-
uoy of Verfes, as they were going Priuiliie to
viçtuall the Low Countries.

Vnda impellitur vnda.

By Tho. Nashe, Gentleman.
To the most copious Carminist
of our time, and famous persecutor of Priscian his
verie friend Maifter Apis lapis: Tho. Nash wish-
eth new strings to his old tawnie Purfe, and
all honourable increafe of acquain-
tance in the Cellar.

GENTLE M. William, that learned writer
Rhenifh wine & Sugar, in the first booke
of his Comment upon Red-noses, hath this
saying: veterem ferendo iniuriam inuitas nouam,
which is as much in English, as one Cuppe of nipi-
taty puls on another. In moyst consideration whereof,
as also in zealous regard of that high countenance
you shew unto Schollers, I am bolde, in steade of new
wine, to carowfe to you a cuppe of newes: which if
your worship (according to your wonted Chaucerifme)
shall accept in good part, Ile be your daily Orator
to pray, that that pure sanguine complexion of yours
may neuer be famifht with potte-lucke, that you may
taft till your laft gaspe, and line to see the confusion
of both your speciall enemies, Small Beere and Gram-mer rules.

It is not unknowne to report, what a famous potle-pot Patron you have beene to olde Poets in your daies, & how many pounds you have spent (and, as it were, throwne into the fire) vpon the durt of wisedome called Alcumie: Yea, / you are such an infinite Mecænas to learned men, that there is not that morsell of meat they can carue you, but you will eate for their sakes, and accept very thankefully. Thinke not, though vnder correction of your boone-companion-ship, I am dispoed to be a little pleasant, I condemne you of anie immoderation either in eating or drinking, for I know your gouvernment and carriage to bee every way Canonical. Verilie, verilie, all poore Schollers acknowledge you as their patron, prouiditore, and supporter, for there cannot a thredbare Cloake sooner peepe forth, but you strait preffe it to bee an out-brother of your bountie: three decaied Students you kept attending vpon you a long time.

Shall I presume to dilate of the grauitie of your round cap, and your dudgion dagger? It is thought they wil make you be cald vpon shortly to bee Alderman of the Stilliard. And thats well remembred: I heard Jaie, when this last Terme was removed to Hartford, you fell into a greate studie and care by your selfe, to what place the Stilliard should be removed. I promise you truelie it was a deepe medi-
tation, & such as might well have beenemed Eldertons parliament of noxes to have fit upon:

A tauerne in London, onelie upon the motion, mourned al in blacke, and forbare to girt hir temples with iuie, because the grandame of good fellowship was like to depart from among them. And I wonder verie much, that you Sampsonnd not your selfe into a consump'ction with the profound cogitation of it.

Diu viuas in amore iocisque, whatsoever you do, beware of keeping diet. Sloth is a sinne, and one sinne (as one poijon) muft be expelled with another. What can he doe better that hath nothing to do, than fal a drinking to keep him / from idlenesse?

Fah, me thinks my ieafts begin alreadie to smell of the caſke, with talking so much of this liquid prouinder.

In earnest thus; There is a Doctor and his Fart that haue kept a foule stinking stierre in Paules Churchyard; I crie him mercie, I flaundred him, he is scarfe a Doctor till he hath done his Afts: this dodipoule, this didopper, this professed poetical braggt hath raild upon me, without wit or art, in certaine foure penniworth of Letters and three farthing-worth of Sonnets; nor do I meane to present him and Shakerley to the Queens foole-taker for coatch-horjes: for two that draw more equallie in one Oratoriall yoke of vaine-glorie, there is not under heauen.

N. II.
What saie you, Master Apis lapis, will you with your eloquence and credit shield me from carpers? Haue you anie odde shreds of Latine to make this letter-munger a cockscome of?

It stands you in hande to arme your selfe against him; for he speaks against Connicatchers, and you are a Connicatcher, as Connicatching is divided into three parts, the Verfer, the Setter, and the Barnacle.

A Setter I am sure you are not; for you are no Mustitian: nor a Barnacle; for you never were of the order of the Barnardines: but the Verfer I cannot acquite you of, for M. Vaux of Lambeth brings in sure evidence of a breakefast you wonne of him one morning at an unlawful game call'd riming. What lies not in you to amend, plaie the Doctor and defend.

A fellow that I am to talke with by and by, being told that his Father was a Rope-maker, excused the matter after this sort; And hath neuer faint had reprobate to his Father? They are his owne wordes, hee cannot goe from them. You see heere hee makes a Reprobate and a Ropemaker voces convertibles. Go too, take example by him to wash out durt with inke, and run vp to the knees in the channell, if you bee once wetshod. You are amongst grave Doctors, and men of judgement in both Lawes every daye: I pray, aske them the question in my absence, whether
such a man as I haue describ'd this Epiftler to be, one that hath a good handsome pickerdeuant, and a prettie leg to studie the Ciuill Law with, that hath made many proper rimes of the olde cut in his daies, and deferued infinitely of the state by extolling him-selue and his two brothers in euerie booke he writes: whether (I faie) such a famous piller of the Preffe, now in the fourteenth or fifteenth yeare of the raigne of his Rhetorike, giuing mony to haue this his illiterat Pamphlet of Letters printed (whereas others haue monie giuen them to suffer themselues to come in Print) it is not to bee counted as flat simonie, and be liable to one and the fame penalitie?

I tell you, I meane to trounce him after twentie in the hundred, and haue a bout with him with two staues and a pike for this geare.

If he get any thing by the bargaine, lette whatsoever I write hence-forward bee condemned to wrappe humbust in.

Carouse to me good lucke, for I am resolutely bent; the best bloud of the brothers shal pledge me in vineger. O would thou hadst a quaffing boule, which, like Gawens scull, should containe a pecke, that thou mightst swappe off a hartie draught to the successe of this voyiage.

By whatsoever thy visage holdeth most pretious I befeeche thee, by Iohn Dauies soule, and the blew Bore in the Spittle, I coniure thee, to draw out thy purse,
and give me nothing | for the dedication of my Pam-

phlet.

Thou art a good fellow I know, and hadst rather
spend ieasfts than monie. Let it be the tafke of thy
best tearmes, to safeguard this booke through the
enemies countrey.

Procede to cherish thy surpassing carminicall arte
of memorie with full cuppess (as thou doft): let
Chaucer bee new scourd against the day of battaile,
and Terence come but in nowe and then with the
snuffe of a sentence, and Dictum puta, Weele strike
it as dead as a doore naile; Haud teruntii eftimo.
We haue cattes meate and dogges meate inough for
these mungrels. However I write merrilie, I love
and admire thy pleasant wittie humor, which no care
or crosse can make unconuersable. Stil bee constant
to thy content, love poetry, hate pedantisme. Vade,
vale, caue ne titubes, mandataq; frangas.

Thine intirely,

Tho. Nafhe.
To the Gentlemen Readers.

GENTLEMEN, the strong fayth you haue conceiu’d, that I would do workes of supererrogation in anfwering the Doctor, hath made mee to breake my daye with other important busines I had, and stand darting of quils a while like the Porpentine.

I know there want not welwillers to my disgrace, who say my onely Muse is contention; and other, that with Tiberius Caesar pretending to see in the darke, talke of strange obiectes by them discovered in the night, when in truth they are nothing else but the glimmering of their eies.

I will not holde the candle to the Deuill, vnmaske my holiday Muse to enuie; but if any such deepe insighted detræctor will challenge mee to whatfoeuer quiet aduenture of Art, wherein he thinkes mee leaft conuersant, hee shal finde that I am Tam Mercurio quàm Marti, a Scholler in some thing else but contention.

If idle wittes will needes tye knottes on smooth bulrushes with their tongues, faith, the worlde
might thinke I had little to attend, if I should goe about to vnloose them with my penne.

I cannot tell how it comes to passe, but in these ill eide daies of ours, euery man delights with Ixion to beget children of clouds, digge for Pearles in dunghils, and wrest oyle out of iron. Poore Pierce Pennileffe haue they turnd to a conjuring booke, for there is not that line in it, with which they doo not secke to raise vp a Ghost, and, like the hog that convuerts the fixt part of his meate into briftels, so haue they convuerted fixe parts of my booke into bitternes. Aretine, in a Commedie of his, wittycomplaineth that vpstart Commenters, with their Annotations and glofes, had extorted that sense and Morall out of Petrarch, which if Petrarch were alие, a hundred Strappadoes might not make him confesse or subscribе too; So may I complaine that rash heads, vpstart Interpreters, haue extorted & rakte that vnreuerent meaning out of my lines, which a thousand deaths cannot make mee ere grant that I dreamd off.

To them that are abused by their owne jealous collections, and no determined trespasse of mine, this advice, by the way of example, will I giue.

One comming to Doctour Perne on a time, and telling him that hee was miserably raيد on such a day in a Sermon in Saint Maries in Cam-
bridge, I but quoth he, (in his puling manner of speaking) did he name me, did he name me? I warrant you, goe and aske him, and hee will say he meant not mee; So they that are ungroundedly offended at any thing in Pierce Penniless, first let them looke if I did name them; if not, but the matter hangeth in suspence, let them fend to mee for my exposition, and not buy it at the seconde hand, and I doe not doubt but they will be throughly satisfied.

Hee / that wraps himselfe in earth, like the Foxe, to catch birds, may haps haue a heauy cart go oter him before he be aware, and breake his backe.

A number of Apes may get the glowworme in the night and thinke to kindle fire with it, because it glisters so, but, God wote, they are beguiled, it proves in the end to be but fools fire: the poore worme alone with their blowing warmed, they starud for colde whiles their wood is vntoucht. Who but a Foppe wil labour to anatomize a Flye? Fables were free for any bondman to speake in old time, as Æsop for an instance: their allusion was not restrained to any particular humor of spite, but generally applied to a generall vice. Now a man may not talke of a dog, but it is surmisfed he aimes at him that giueth the dog in his Crest: hee cannot name
straw, but hee must plucke a wheate sheaffe in pieces, Intelligendo faciunt vt nihil intelligent.

What euer they be that thus persecute Art (as the Alcumists are said to persecute Nature) I would wish them to abate the edge of their wit, and not grinde their colours so harde: hauing founde that which is blacke, let them not, with our forenamed Gold-falsifiers, seeke for a substance that is blacker than black, or angle for frogs in a cleare fountaine.

From the admonition of these vncurteous misconsterers, I come to The kilcow champion of the three brethren; he forsooth wil be the first that shal giue Pierce Penileffe a non placet.

It is not inough that hee bepast his credite, about twelve yeeres ago, with Three proper and wittie familiar letters, but still he must be running on the letter, and abusing the Queens English without pittie or mercie.

Bee / it knowne vnto you (Christian Readers) this man is a forestaller of the market of fame, an ingroffer of glorie, a mountebanke of strange wordes, a meere marchant of babies and conny-skins.

Hold vp thy hand, G. H., thou art heere indited for an incrocher vpon the fee-simple of the Latin, an enemie to Carriers, as one that takes their occupation out of their hands, and doth
nothing but transport letters vp and downe in thy owne commendation, a conspiratour and practiser to make Printers rich, by making thyselfe ridiculous, a manifest briber of Bookeellers and Stationers, to helpe thee to fell away thy bookes (whose impression thou paidst for) that thou mayst have money to goe home to Trinitie Hall to discharge thy commons.

I say no more but Lord haue mercie vpon thee, for thou art falne into his hands that will plague thee.

Gentlemen, will you be instructed in the quarrell that hath causd him lay about him with his penne and incke horne so couragiously? About two yeeres since (a fatall time to familiar Epiftles) a certayne Theologicall gimpanado, a demie diuine, no higher than a Tailors presfing iron, brother to this huge booke-beare, that writes himselfe One of the Emperour Iustinians Courtiers, tooke vppon him to set his foote to mine, and ouer crow mee with comparatiue tearmes. I protest I neuer turnd vp any cowsheard to looke for this scarabe flye. I had no conceit as then of discouering a breed of fooles in the three brothers bookes: marry, when I beheld ordinance planted on edge of the pulpit against me, & that there was no remedy but the blind Vicar would needs let flie at me with his Churchdore keies, & curse me with bel, book and
candle, because in my Alphabet of Idiots I had ouer / skipt the Hs, what could I doe but draw vpon him with my penne, and defende my selfe with it and a paper buckler as well as I might.

Say, I am as verie a Turke as hee that three yeeres ago ranne vpon ropes, if euer I speld eyther his or anie of his kindreds name in reproch, before hee barkt againft mee as one of the enemies of the Lambe of God, and fetcht allusions out of the Butterie to debase mee.

Heere beginneth the fray. I vpbraied godly predication with his wicked conuerfation, I squirt inke into his decayed eyes with iniquitie to mend their diseased sight, that they may a little better descend into my schollership and learning. The Ecclesiafticall duns, instead of recoery, waxeth: starke blind thereby (as a preferuative to some, is poyfon to others): hee gets an olde Fencer, his brother, to be reuenged on me for my Phificke; who, flourishing about my eares with his two hand sworde of Oratory and Poetry, peraduenture shakes some of the ruff of it on my shoulders, but otherwise strikes mee not but with the shadowe of it, which is no more than a flappe with the falsc scabberd of contumelie: whether am I in this case to arme my selfe againft his intent of iniurie, or fitte still with my finger in my mouth, in hope to bee one of simplicities martyrs?
A quest of honorable minded Cauailers go vppon it, and if they shall find by the Law of armes or of ale, that I, beeing first prouokt, am to bee inioynde to the peace, or be sworne true servant to cowardize & patience, when wrong pressieth mee to the warres; then will I bind my selfe prettise to a Cobler, and fresh vnderlay all those writings of mine that haue trodde awrie.

Be aduertised (gentle audience) that the Doctours proceedings haue thrust vppon mee this sowterly Metaphor, who, first contiruing his confutation in a short Pamphlet of fix leaues, like a paire of summer pumps: afterward (winter growing on) clapt a paire of double soales on it like a good husband, added eight sheets more, and prickt those shets or soales, as full of the hob-nayles of reprefion as they could fticke.

It is not those his new clowted startops iwis, that shall carry him out of the durt.

Sweet Gentlemen, be but indifferent, and you shal see me desperate. Heere lies my hatte, and there my cloake, to which I resemeble my two Epiftles, being the vpper garments of my booke, as the other of my body: Saint Fame for mee, and thus I runne vpon him.

Tho. Nashe.
The foure Letters Confuted.

ABRIEL, and not onely Gabriel, but Gabrielissime Gabriel, no Angell but Angelos, id est, Nuntius, a Fawnguest Messenger twixt Maister Bird and Maister Demetrius: Behold, here stands he that will make it good, on thy foure Letters bodie, that thou art a filthy vaine foole. Thy booke I commend; as very well printed: and like wondrous well, because all men dislike it.

I agree with thee that there are in it some matters of note, for there are a great many bare-foote rimes in it, that goe as iumpe as a Fiddle, with euery ballet-makers note: and if according to their manner, you had tun'd them ouer the head, it had beene nere the worfe, for by that meanes you might haue had your name chaunted in euery corner of the streete, then the which there can be nothing more melodiouslie addoulce to
your *deuine Entelechy*. O they would haue trowld off brauely to the tune of *O man in Desperation*, and, like *Marenzos Madrigals*, the mournefull note naturally haue affected the miserable Dittie.

Doe you knowe your owne misbegotten bodgery *Entelechy / and addoulce*? With these two Hermophrodite phrafas, being halfe Latin and halfe English, haft thou puld out the very guts of the inkehorne.

**LETTERS.**

*To all curteous mindes that will vouchsafe the reading.*

**Comment.**

In their abfence, this be deliuered to Megge *Curtis* in Shorditch, to flop mustard pots with.

**The particular Contents.**

L. *A Præface to courteous mindes.*

C. As much to say as Proface, much good do it you, would it were better for you.

L. *A Letter to M. Emanuel Demetrius, with a sonnet thereto annexed.*

C. That is, as it were a purgation vpon a vomit, bufskins vpon pantophles.

L. *A Letter to M. Bird.*

C. Or little matter wrapt vp in many words.

L. *A Letter to euerie favorable and indifferent Reader.*
C. *Id est*, An exhortation to all Readers, that they shall reade nothing but his works.

L. *Another letter to the fame, extorted after the rest.*

C. By interpretation, a Letter whereof his invention had a hard stoole, and yet it was for his ease, though not for his honestie: and so forth, as the Text shall direct you at large.

________

Heere / beginneth the first Epistle and first Booke of Orator Gabriell to the Catilinaries or Philippicks.

*Wherein is diuulged that venum is venum and will infect, that that which is done cannot (de facto) be undone, that favour is a curteous Reader, and G. H. your thankfull debtor.*

_A Comment vpon the Text._

The learned Orator in this Epistle *taketh precise order* he will not be too eloquent, and yet it shall be (1) as well for enditing unworthie to be published, as for publishing unworthie to be endited.

C. He had many aduersaries in those times that he wrote, amongst the which Cloth-breeches and Veluet-breeches (his fathers pouerty, and his owne pride, were none of the meanest).

After them start up one *Pierce Pennileffe,* and
hee likewise was a ftumbling blocke in his way. (Penurie not long tarries after pride; pray all the ropes in Saffron Walden that I do not prophesie). Amen, Amen, quoth M. Bird and M. Demetrius.

Hee forbeares to speake much in this place of the one or the other, because his letters are more forward to accuse them than their owne books to condemn them; yet for a touch by the way, hee talks that Greene is no liuerey / for this winter, it is pitifully blasted and faded in euerie meade, by the strong breath of his barbarisme.

Hee hath a twitch at Pierce Pennileffe too, at the parting stile, and tearms him the Deuils Orator by profession, and his Dames Poet by practife: wherein mee thinks (the surreuerence of his works not impaired) he hath verie highly ouerfliotte himselfe: for no more is Pierce Pennileffe to be cald the Deuils Orator for making a Supplication to the Deuill, than hee is to bee helde for a Rhethoritian, for setting foorth Gabriellis Scuruei Rhetor, wherein hee thought to haue knockt out the braines of poore Tullies Orator, but in veritie did nothing else, but gather a flaunting vnfauory fore-horse nosegay out of his well furnisshed garland.

The aduancemēt of the Deuils Oratorship, which he ascribeth to Pierce Pennileffe, me thinks had beeene a fit place for his Doctorship, when hee mift
the Oratorship of the University, of which in the sequele of his booke, he most slanderously complaineth. Doctor Perne, Greene, no dead man he spareth.

What he should subaudi by his Dames Poet, I scarce apprehend, except this, that Pierce his Father was Dame Lawes[on's] Poet, and writte many goodly stories of her in An Almond for [a] Parrat.

Those that will take a Lecture in our Orators letters must not read, excuse, commend, credite or beleue anie approved truth in Pierce Pennileffe, especially if it be anything that vpbraideth the great Baboune his brother.

Hee will stoppe the beginning, id est, when hee hath come behind a man and broke his head, seeke to bind him to the good abearing, or els the ende were like to prove pernicious and perilous to his confusion.

Some/what hee mutters of defamation and iust commendation, & what a hell it is for him, that hath built his heauen in vaine-glory, to bee puld by the sweue and bidde respice finem, looke backe to his Fathers house; but I ouerflippe it as friuolous, becaufe all the world knowes him better than he knowes himselfe, & though he play the Pharife neuer so in iustifying his owne innocence, theres none will beleue him.

Let this bee spoken once for all, as I haue a
foule to faue, till this day in all my life, with tongue nor penne, did I euery in the leafty worde or tittle derogate from the Doctor. If his brother (without any former prouocation on my part, God is my witnesse) rayld on me grossely, expresly namde mee, comparde me to Martin, indeuord to take from mee all estimation of Arte or witte, haue I not cause to bestirre mee?

Gabriell, I will bestirre mee, for all like an Alehoufe Knight, thou crau'ft of Iustice to do thee reason: as for impudencie and calumny, I returne them in thy face, that, in one booke of tenne sheets of paper, haue published aboue two hundred lies.

Had they been wittie lies, or merry lies, they would never haue green'd mee: but palpable lies, damned lies, lies as big as one of the Guardes chynes of beepe, who can abide?

Ile make thee of my counfaile, because I loue thee (not): when I was in Cambridge, and but a childe, I was indifferently perfwaded of thee: mee thought by thy apparell and thy gate, thou shouldst haue beene a fine fellow: Little did I suspeet that thou wert brother to Io. Pwan (whom inwardly I alwaies grudgd at for writing against Aristotle) or any of the Hs of Hempehall, but a Cauailier of a clean contrary house: now thou haft quite spoild thy selfe, from the foote to the head I can tell how thou art fashioned.
Teterrime frater, and not fraterrime frater, maist thou verie wofully exclaine, for in helping him, thou haft crackt thy credit through the ring, made thy infamie currant as farre as the Queenses coyne goes.

But it may be thou haft a sider close for this quarrell: thou wilt object, thy Father was abused, & that made thee write. What, by mee, or Greene, or both?

If by Greene and not mee, thou shouldst haue written against Greene and not mee. If by both, I will answere for both, but not by both, therefore I will aunswere but for one.

Give an instance, if thou canst for thy life, wherein in any leaf of Pierce Penileffe I had so much as halfe a fillables relation to thee, or offend one iot of indignitie to thy Father, more than naming the greatest dignitie he hath, when for varietie of Epithites, I calde thy brother the sonne of a Ropemaker.

We shall have a good sonne of you anone, if you be ashamed of your fathers occupation: ah thou wilt nere thriue, that art beholding to a trade, and canst not abide to heare of it.

Thou dost lie by the gallows, & wouldst not have a shoe to put on thy foot, if thy father had no traffike with the hangman. Had I a Rope-maker to my father, & some body had cast it in
my teeth, I would forthwith haue writ in praife of Ropemakers, & prou’d it by fou’d sillogistry to be one of the 7 liberal sciences.

Somewhat I am priuie to the caufe of Greenes inueighing against the three brothers. Thy hot-spirited brother Richard (a notable ruffian with his pen) hauing first tooke vpon him in his blundring Persifual, to play the Iacke of both sides twixt Martin and vs, and snarl’d priuily at Pap-hatchet, Pafsquill, & others, that oppos’d themselves against the open flaunder of that mightie plattformer of Atheisme, presently after dribbed forth another fooles bolt, a booke I shoulde say, which he christened The Lambe of God.

That booke was a learned booke, a labourd booke; for three yere before he put it in print, he had preacht it all without booke.

I my selfe haue some of it in a booke of Sermons that my Tutor at Cambridge made mee gather euery Sunday. Then being very yoong, I counted it the abiestest and frothiest forme of Diuinitie that came in that place. Now more confirmed in age and Art, I confirme my ill opinion of it.

Neither do I vrge this, as if it were a hainous thing for a man to put sermons in print after hee preacht them, but obserue the proud humor of the pert Didimus, that thinks nothing he speakes but
deferues to be put in print, and speakes not that sentence in the Pulpit, which before he rough-hewes not ouer with his penne. Besides, I taxe him for turning an olde coate (like a Broker) and selling it for a new.

These and a thousand more imperfections, might haue beene buried with his bookes in the bottome of a drie-fatte, and there slept quietly amongst the shauings of the Presse, if in his Epistle he had not beene so arrogantly censoriall.

Not mee alone did hee reuile and dare to the combat, but glickt at Pap-hatchet once more, and misterned all our other Poets and writers about London, piperly make-plaies and make-bates.

Hence Greene, beeing chiefe agent for the companie (for hee writ more than foure other, how well I will not say: but Sat cità, fi frat bene) tooke occasion to canuaze him a little in his Cloth-breeches and Veluet-breeches, and because by some probable collections hee geft the elder brothers hand was in it, he coupled them both in one yoake, and, to fulfill the prouerbe Tria sunt omnia, thruft in the third brother, who made a perfect parriall of Pamphleters.

About some seauen or eight lines it was which hath pluckt on an invectiue of so many leaues. Had hee liu'd, Gabriel, and thou shouldst so vnarteficially and odiously libeld against him as
thou haft done, he would haue made thee an example of ignominy to all ages that are to come, and driuen thee to eate thy owne booke butterd, as I faue him make an Apparriter once in a Tauern eate his Citation, waxe and all, very handsomly seru'd twixt two dishes.

Out vppon thee for an arrant dog-killer, strike a man when he is dead?

So Hares may pull dead Lions by the beards.

Memorandum. I borrowed this sentence out of a Play. The Theater Poets hall, hath many more such proverbes to perfecute thee with, because thou haft so scornefully derided their profession, and despitefully maligned honest sports.

Before I vnbowell the leane Carcase of thy book any further, Ile drinke one cup of lambswool to the Lambe of God and his enemies.

In the first foure leaves of it, I haue singled out these Godly and fruitfull obseruations.

Noble Lord, I doe it even upon former premisses, not for any future consequents.

My booke is not worthy of so honorable specialitie as your Patronage.

I will not prosecute it with Theological peculiars, but from the mouth of the sword I speake, &c.

The hearts of the wicked pant, their spirits faile them, they may well call for butter out of a Lordlie dish.
You that bee gentle Readers, doe you not laugh at this Lawiers englifh of former premises and future consequents?

O finicalitie, your patronages speciallitie, but if he prosecute it with Theological peculiarities, we must needs thrust him inter oues et bouses & reliqua pecora campi.

From the mouth of the sword I speake it, that butter out of a Lordly dish is but lewd diet for the Pulpit.

But this is not halfe the littour of incgehornisme, that those foure pages haue pigd. I must tell you of the Octonarium of Ramus, the Sesquiamus of Phrigius, the Carthusianisme of Gulielmus Rikel, of Annals, Diaries, Chronologies, & Tropologicall schoolemen, the Abetilis of the Æthiopians or Pretoiommans, of Gulielmus minatenfis, & S. Ierome allegorized, Abdias, Lyra, Gryson, Porta, Pantaleon.

All which hee reckons vp to make the world beleeeue he hath read much, but alleadgeth nothing out of them: Nor, I thinke, on my conscience, euer read or knew what they meane, but he hath stole them by the wholesale out of some Booksellers Catalogue, or a table of tractats.

Here are some of his profounde Annotations: Iacob tooke Leah, for his bedfellow in the darke by night, insteede of Rachell, whereby I learne to buy
my wife candle to goe to bed withall, and admit her not by darke, but by light.

Iacob was deceiued by Labans words: ergo, Obligations are better than bils, and we must believe no man, except he will waxe and multiplie in words, and call inke & parchment to witnes.

Iacob laide pilled rods with white strakes in the wattering places of the sheepe, whereby I note that in carnal mixture the senses are opened.

JUDGE you that be Fathers of the Church, whether this be fit matter to edifie or no.

It was not for nothing brother Richard, that Greene told you you kift your Parishioners wiues with holy kisses, for you that wil talk of opening the senses by carnal mixture (the very act of lecherie) in a Theological Treatise, and in the Pulpit, I am atraide, in a priuater place you will practife as much as you speake: HOMINES raro, nisi male locuti, male faciunt. Olet hircum, olet hircum, anie modest eare would abhorre to heare it.

Farewell vncreane Vicar, and God make thee an honest man, for thou art too baudy for mee to deale withall.

It followes in the Text,

To my verie good friend Maister Emanuell Demetrius.

This letter of M. Bird to M. Demetrius, should seeme, by all reference or collation of stiles, to
bee a Letter which M. Birds secretarie, Doctor Gabriell, indited for him in his owne praise, and got him to sette his hand to when he had done. Or rather, it is no letter, but a certificate (such as Rogues haue) from the head man of the Parifh where hee was borne, that Gabriell is an excellent generall Scholler, and his Father of good behauior.

We will not beleue it except wee see the Towne seale sette to it: but, say wee shoule beleue it, what doth it make for thee? Haue the Townesmen of Saffron Waldon euer heard thee preach, that they should commend thee for an excellent generall scholler? or (because thou profefted thy self a Civillian) haft thou solicited any of their caufes in the bawdy Courtes therabouts? If not, go your wayes a dolt as you came: Master /Birdes Letter shall not repriue you from the ladder.

But Veluet-breeches and Cloth-breeches (by the judgement of the beft man of none of the leaft towns in Essex) is a fantasticall and fond Dialogue, and one of the most licentious intollerable inueftiues that euer hee read.

Why?

In it is abufed an auncient neighbour of his.

How is he abufed?

In stead of his name, hee is called by the craft hee gets his liuving with.
He hath borne office in Walden above twenty yere since (hoc est, had the keeping of the Towne stocke, alias the stocks) Ergo he is no Rope-maker.

He hath maintaing foure jonnes at Cambridge; Ergo Greene is a lewd fellow to say he gets his liuing backward.

Three of his jonnes universally ridiculoufie reputed of (for inamoratos on their owne works) in both Universities and the whole Realme. The fourth is shrunke in the wetting, or else the Print shoulde haue heard of him.

One of the three (whom the Quij entitles the Phyfition) returning sicke from Norwitch to Linne in Julie laft, was paft writing any more Almanackes, before Greene ere imagined God had thought fo well of him to take him to him.

Liuer post fata quiescat. Mother Liuers of Newington is a better fortune-teller than he was a Phifition.

A / Dash through the Dudgen Sonnet against Greene.

Put vp thy fmiter O gentle Peter, 
Author and halter make but ill meeter.

I fcorne to answer thy mishapen rime:
Blocks haue cald schollers bayards ere this time.

I would trot a false gallop through the rest of
his ragged Verses, but that if I should retort his rime dogrell aright, I must make my verses (as he doth his) run hobling like a Brewers Cart upon the stones, and observe no length in their feete; which were absurdum per absurdius, to infect my vaie with his imitation.

The Analasis of the whole is this: an olde mechanical meeter-munger would faine raile, if he had anie witte. If Greene were dogge-ficke and brain-ficke, sure he (poore secular Satirift) is dolt-ficke and brainleffe, that with the tooth-leffe gums of his Poetry so betuggeth a dead man.

But I cannot be induced to beleue a graue man of his sort should be so raually bent: when all comes to all, shortest vowels and longest mutes will bewray it to bee a webbe of your owne loomes, M. Gabriel: you mute fourth many such phraies in the course of your booke, which I will point at as I passe by.

I will not robbe you of your due commendation in anything: in this Sonnet you haue counterfeited the fyle of the olde Vice in the Morals, as right vp and downe as may be.

Let. Greene, the Connycatcher, of this dreame the author,

For his daintie deuise deserveth the hauter.
Vice. / Hey nan anon sir, soft let me make water,
   Whip it to go, Ile kisse my maisters daughter.
   Tum diddy, tum da, falangte do diddle:
   Sol la me fa fol, conatus in fiddle.

I am afraide your Doctors fart will fall out to be
a fatall foyst to your breeches, if we followe you
at the hard heeles as we haue begun.
Thou shalt not breath a whit, trip and goe,
turne ouer a new leafe.

Maister Bird, in the abfence of M. Demetrius.
Perge porrò. I found his wife curteous: barlady
sir, but this is fupitious.

A woman is well holpen vp that does you any
curtefie in the abfence of her husband, when you
cannot keepe it to your felfe, but you must blab it
in print.

If it were any other but Mistris Demetrius
(whome I haue heard to be a modest fober woman,
and indued with many vertues) I would play vp
on it a little more. In regard that shee is fo, I for-
beare ; and craue pardon in that I haue spoken fo
much.

Yet would I haue her vnderftand how well the
generall scholler her gueft, hath rewarded hir for
his kind entertainment, by bringing her name in
queftion in print.

M. Bird and Demetrius, I knowe neither of
you by fight, but this Ile say, being of that welth you are, you had better haue spent a great deale of money, than come in the mouth of this base companion.

What reaſon haue I (feeing your names sub-
cribed as his bolsterer, in a matter of defame that concerns mee) but to go through ſtitch with you, as well as him?

He thinks to ouer-beare vs as poore beggers with the / great oftentation of your rich acquaintance.

Lette all Noblemen take heede how they giue this Thraſo the leaſt becke or countenance, for if they bestowe but halfe a glaunce on him, hele ſtraight put it verie solemnly in print, and make it ten times more than it is.

Ile tell you a merry ieast.

The time was when this Timothie Tiptoes made a Latine Oration to her Majeftie. Her Highn'es as she is vnſto all her ſubieſts moſt gratious: ſo to schollers she is more louing and affable than any Prince vnder heauen. In which reſpeſt, of her owne vertue and not his deſert, it pleafed hir ſo to humble the height of hir iudgment, as to grace him a little whiles he was pronouncing, by these or ſuch like tearmes. Tis a good pretie fellow, a lookes like an Italian, and after hee had concluded, to call him to kiffe her royall hand. Herevpon he goes home to his ſtudie, all intrauenced, and
writes a whole volume of Verses; first, *De vultu Itali*, of the countenance of the Italian; and then *De ofculo manus*, of his kissting the Queenes hande. Which two Latin poems he publisht in a booke of his cald *Ædes Valdinenses*, proclaiming thereby (as it were to England Fraunce, Italie and Spaine) what fauour hee was in with her Maiestie.

I dismisfe this *Parenthesis*, and *come to his next businesse* : which indeede is his first businesse: for tyll Greene awakte him out of his selfe admiring contemplation, hee had nothing to doe but walke vnnder the Ewe tree at Trinitie hall, and say:

What may I call this tree, an Ewe tree, O bonny Ewe tree, 
Needes to thy boughs will bow this knee, and vaile my bonnetto.

Or / make verses of weathercocks on the top of steeples, as he did once of the weathercocke of Alhallows in Cambridge:

*O thou weathercocke that stands on the top of the church of Alhallows, 
Come thy waies down if thou darst for thy crowne, and take the wall on vs.*

*O Heathenish and Pagan Hexamiters, come thy waies down frō thy Doctourship, & learne thy Primer of Poetry ouer again, for certainly thy pen is in state of a Reprobate with all men of judgement and reckoning.*

*Come thy waies down from thy Doctourship,*
said I? *Erraui demens,* thou never wenst vp to it yet.

Fie on hypocrisy and Dissimulation, that men should make themselves better than they are!

Alas a Gods will, thou art but a plaine moth-eaten Master of Art, and never pollutedst thyself with any plaistrie or dawbing of Doctorship.

Lift Pauls Churchyard (the peruser of eueries mans works, & Exchange of all Authors), you are a many of you honest fellows, and favour men of wit.

So it is that a good Gowne and a well pruned paire of moustachios, hauing studied sixteene yeare to make thirteene ill english Hexameters, came to the Vniversity Court *regentium & non,* to sue for a commission to carry two faces in a hoode: they not v sing to deny honour to any man that defereued it, bad him performe all the Schollerlike ceremonies and disputatiue right appertaining thereto, and he should bee installled.

*Noli me tangere:* he likt none of that.

A stripling that hath an indifferent pretie stocke of reputation abroade in the worlde already, and some credit amongst his neighbours, as he thinketh, would be loth to ieoperd all at one throwe at the dice.

If hee should haue disputed for his degree, descend *in arenam & puluerem Philosophicum,* and
haue been foild, Anh me quoth Wit in lamentable sort, what should haue become of him? hee might haue beene shot through ere hee were aware, with a Sillogisme.

No point, Ergo, it were wisely done of goodman Boores sone, if he should goe to the warres for honor, and returne with a wodden legge, when he may buy a Captaine ship at home better cheape.

Pumps and Pantofles, because they were well blackt and glittered iolly freshly on it, being rubd ouer with inke, had their grace at length to be Doctour, Ea lege, that they should do their acts (that is, performe more than they were able).

Curst be the time that eu er there were any obligations made with conditions, Unde habeas quae rit nemo, fed oportet habere, Howe Dorbell comes to bee Doctour none asks, but Doctour hee must bee to make him right worshipfull.

Acts are but idle wordes, and the Scripture faith, wee must giue account for euery idle word.

Pumps and Pantofles sweare they will iet away with a cleare conscience at the daie of iudgement, and therfore do no Acts, giue no offence with idle words, onelie like a Hauke let flie at a Partridge, that turns the taile and betakes her to a walnut-tree, so to Oxford they trudge, hauing their grace ad disputandum, and there are confirmed in the same degree they tooke at Cambridge: which is
as if a Prentife heere in London, as foone as hee is enrould, should runne to some such Towne as Ipswich, and there craue to haue his Freedome confirmed as of London: which, in truth is / no Freedome, because hee hath not feru'd out his prentifhip.

Trust mee not for a dodkin, if there bee not all the Doctourship hee hath, yet will the insolent incke worme write himfelfe Right worshipfull of the Lawes, and perfonate this man and that man, calling him my good friend Maiñer Doctour at euery word.

Doctour or no Doctour, Greene surfeited not of pickled hearing, but of exceeding feare of his Familiar Epiftles.

Hee offer'd in his extreamest want twentie shillings to the Printer to leaue out the matter of the three brothers.

Haud facile credo, I am sure the Printer beeing of that honestie that I take him for, will not affirme it.

Marry this I muñt say, there was a learned Doctour of Phificke (to whom Greene in his sicknesse sent for counfaile) that hauing read ouer the booke of Veluetbreeches and Clothbreeches, and laughed merrilie at the three brothers legend, wild Green in any case either to mitigate it, or leaue it out: Not for any extraordinarie account hee made
of the fraternitie of fooles, but for one of them
was proceeded in the same facultie of phisicke
hee profeft, and willinglie hee would haue none
of that excellent calling ill spoken off.

This was the cause of the altring of it, the feare
of his Phisitions displeasure, and not anie feare else.

I keepe your conscionous minde, with all other odde
ends of your halfe fac'd englifh, till the full con-
clusion of my booke, where in an honorable Index
they shall be placed according to their degree and
segnioritie.

Wee are to vexe you mightely for plucking
Elderton out of the afhes of his Ale, and not letting
him inioy his nappie muse of ballad making to
himselfe, but now, when he is as dead as dead
beere, you must bee finding fault with the brewing
of his meeters.

Hough Thomas Delone, Phillip Stubs, Robert
Armin, &c., your father Elderton is abuf'd. Re-
venge, reuenge on course paper and want of
matter, that hath most facriligioufly contaminated
the diuine spirit & quinteffence of a penny a quart.

Helter skelter, feare no colours, course him,
trounce him, one cup of perfect bonauenture licour
will inspire you with more wit and Schollership
than hee hath thruft into his whole packet of
Letters.

You that bee lookers on, perhaps imagine I
talke like a merry man, and not in good earneft, when I say that *Elderton* ghost and *Gabriel* are at such odds: but then you knowe nothing, for there hath bee ne a monftrous emulation twixt *Elderton* and him time out of mind. Yea, they were riuals in riming foure yeare before the great froft. Hee expressely writ against him, 1580, *In his short but sharpe and learned iudgement of Earth-quakes*.

Broome boyes, and corne cutters, (or whatfoeuer trade is more contemptible) come not in his way, ftand fortie foote from the execution place of his furie, for else in the full tide of his ftandifh, he will carry your occupations handfmeout of towne before him, bemeare them, drowne them: downe the riuier they goe *Priuily* to the Ile of Dogges with his Pamphlets.

O it is a peftilent libeller against beggers: hee meanes shortly to set foorth a booke cald his Paraphrafe vpon Paris Garden, wherein hee will fo tamper / with the interpreter of the Puppits, and betoufe Harry of Tame and great Ned, that *Titius shall not vpbraid Caius with euerie thing and nothing* nor *Zoylus anie more flurt Homer, nor Therfites fling at Agamemnon*.

Holla, holla, holla, *flurt, fling*, what reafty Rhetoricke haue we here? certes, certes, brother *hoddy doddy*, your penne is a coult by cockes body.
As touching the libertie of Orators and Poets, I will conferre with thee somewhat grauely, although thou beest a goose-cappe and haft no judgement.

A libertie they haue thou sayst, but no liberty without bounds, no licence without limitation.

Iesu what mister wonders dost thou tell us? euery thing hath an end, and a pudding hath two. That libertie, Poets of late in their iucundities haue exceeded: they haue borne their sword vp where it is not lawfull for a poynado that is but the page of prowesse, to intermeddle.

Thou bringst in Mother Hubbard for an instance. Go no further, but here confesse thy self a flat nodgcombe before all this congregation; for thou haft dealt by thy friend as homely as thou didst by thy father.

Who publikely accusde or of late brought Mother Hubbard into question, that thou shouldest by rehearsall rekindle against him the sparkes of displeasure that were quenched?

Forgot he the pure sanguine of his Fairy Queene, sayst thou?

A pure sanguine fot art thou, that in vaine-glory to haue Spencer known for thy friend, and that thou haft some interest in him, cenfereft him worse than his deadliest enemie would do.

If / any man were vnderseuedly toucht in it,
CONFUTED.

thou hast reuied his disgrace that was so toucht in it, by renaming it, when it was worn out of al mens mouths and minds.

Befides, whereas before I thought it a made matter of some malitious moralizers againft him, and no substance of slander in truth, now, when thou (that proclaimesst thy selfe the only familiar of his bosome, and therefore shouldst know his secretes) giues it out in print that he ouershotte himselfe therein; it cannot chuse but be suspected to be so indeed.

Immortall Spencer, no frailtie hath thy fame, but the imputation of this Idiots friendship: vpon an vnspotted Pegafus should thy gorgeous attired Fayrie Queene ride triumphant through all reports dominions, but that this mud-born bubble, this bile on the browe of the Vniuerfitie, this bladder of pride newe blowne, challengeth some interest in her prosperitie.

Of pitch who hath any vfe at all, shall be abusd by it in the end.

High grasse that florisheth for a seacon on the house toppe, fadeth before the haruest cals for it, and maye well make a fayre shewe, but hath no sweetnesse in it. Such is this Asse in presenti, this groffe painted image of pride, who would faine counterfeite a good witte, but scornfull pittie, his best patron, knows it becomes him as ill, as an
vnweldy Elephant to imitate a whelpe in his wantonnes.

I wote not how it falls out, but his inuention is ouerwepond; he hath some good words, but he cannot writhe them and toffe them to and fro nimbly, or so bring them about, that hee maye make one sfreight thurf at his enemies face.

Coldly and dully idem per idem, who cannot indite? but with life and spirit to limne deadnes it selfe, Hoc est oratoris proprium.

L. Inuectuies by fauour haue beene too bolde, and Satires by usurpation too presumptuous. What pleasure brings this to the reader? Iacke of the Falcon in Cambridge can say as much, and giue no reason for it.

But I can prompt you with a demonstration wherein Inuectuies haue been too bold. Do you remember what you writ in your Item for Earthquakes, of double fac'd Iani, changeable Camelions, Aspen leaues, painted sheathes, and sepulchers, Asses in Lions skinnes, dunghill cockes, filpperie eees, dormife, &c.? Besides your testimoniall of Doctor Perne, wherein it pleased you, of your singular liberalitie and bountie, to beflowe vpon [him] this beautifull Encomium:—A busie and dizzie head, a brazen forehead, a leaden braine, a wodden witte, a copper face, a stonie brest, a faffious and eluifh heart, a founder of nouelties, a confounder of his owne and
his friends good giftes, a morning booke-worme, an afternoon malt-worme, a right lugler, as full of his sleightes, wiles, fetches, cafts of legerdemaine, toys to mocke Apes withall, odde shifts and knauish practises, as his skinne can holde.

Notwithstanding all this, you deifie, cut and long-taile, that can accuse you of any scandalous part either in word or deed.

Tully, Horace, Archilochus, Aristophanes, Lucian, Iulian, Aretine, goe for no paiment with you: their declamatory stiles, brought to the grand test of your judgement, are found counterfeit, they are a venomous and viprous brood of railers, because they haue broght in a new kind of a quicke fight, which your decrepite flow-mouing capacitie cannot fadge with.

Tush, tush, you take the graue peake vppon you too/much: who would think you could so easilly shake off your olde friendes? Did not you in the fortie one Page, line 2, your Epiftles to Collin Clout vfe this speech?

Extra iocum, I like your Dreames passing well: and the rather because they fauor of that fingular extraordinary vaine and inuention which I euer fancied moft, and in a manner admired onely in Lucian, Petrarch, Aretine, Pasquil.

Die fodes (godamercie on Dicke Sothis soule, for he was a better dauncer than thou art an enditer,
& with his legges he made some Musicke (there is none in thy letters) answere mee briefly, I say, to the point, haue I varied one voweir from thy originall text in this allegation? If not, I cannot see how the Doctours may well be reconcil'd, one while to commend a man because his writings fauour of that singular extraordinarie vaine, which he onely admired in Lucian, Petrarch, Aretine, Pafquil: and then in another booke afterward, to come and call those singular extraordinarie admired men a venemous and viperous brood of railers.

The auncienter sort of Poets and Oratours shall plead their owne worthinesse.

Tullie neuer overreached himself in railing so much as in flatterie. His Phillipicks (sound Phyfick applide to a body that could not digest it) are the things that especially commended him to this art-thriuing age of ours, and had not these beene, hee would certainly haue beene sentenced by a generall verdit of histories for a timerous time-pleaser.

Who cannot draw a curtaine before a deformed picture? Plautus perfonated no Parasite, but he made him a flaue or a bondman.

Fawning and crouching are the naturall gestures of feare, and if it bee a vertue for a vassalle to licke a mans shooes with his tongue, sure it is
but borrowed from the dogges; and so is biting too, if it bee accompanied with ouer lowd barking, or in such wise as it cannot pinch but it must breake the fleth and drawe bloud.

Horace, Perfeus, Juvenall, my poore judgment lendeth you plentiful allowance of applause: yet had you, with the Phrigian melodie, that stirreth men vp to battaile and furie, mixt the Dorian tune, that sauoureth mirth and pleasure, your vn-fugred pilles (howeuer excellently medicinable) would not haue beene so harsh in the swallowing. So likewise Archilochus, thou like the preachers to the Curtizans in Roome, that expound to them all Lawe and no Gospell, art all gall and no spleene. Hence came it to passe, that with the meere efficacie of thy incensed Lambicks, thou mad’ft a man runne and hang himselfe that had angered thee.

Thee I imbrace Aristophanes, not so much for thy Comedie of the clowd, which thou wrotst against philosophers, as for in al other thy inuen-tions thou interfusest delight with reprehension.

Lucian, Julian, Aretine, all three admirably blest in the abundant giftes of art and nature: yet Religion, which you sought to ruinate, hath ruinated your good names, and the opposing of your eyes against the bright sunne, hath cauSD the worlde condemne your fight in all other
things. I protest, were you ought else but abominable Atheiftes, I would obstinately defende you, onely because Laureate Gabriell articles against you.

This I will iustifie against any Dromidote Ergonift whatsoever, there is no other vnlaſciuous vfe or end of /poetry, but to infamize vice, and magnifie vertue, and that if they assemble all the examples of verfe-founders from Homer to Hugh Copland, they shall not find anie of them but hath encountred with the generall abuses of the times.

Whatsoever harpeth not of one of these two strings of praffe and reprofe, is as it were a Dirige in pricksong without anie dittie fet to it, that haply may tickle the eare, but neuer edifies.

In the Romaine common-wealths it was lawful for Poets to reproue that enormitie in the highest chairs of authoritie, which none else durft touch, alwaies the sacred Maiestie of their Augustus kept inuiolate: for that was a Plannet exalted aboue their Hexameter horizon, & it was capitall to them in the highest degree to dispute of his setting and rising, or search inquisitiuely into his predominance and influence.

The secrets of God must not be searcht into. Kings are Gods on earth, their actions must not be founded by their subiects.

Seneca, Neroes tutor, founde his death in no
verse but Oesauia. Imperious Lucan sprinkled but one drop of bloud on his imperiall chayre, and perisht by him also.

Ouid once saw Augustus in a place where he would not haue beene seene ; he was exilde presently to those countries no happy man hears of.

Long might hee, in a blinde Metamorphosis, haue playd vppon all the wenches in Roome, and registred their priuie scapes, vpbrayded inhosпитalitie with the fable of Licaon: alluded to some Ambodexter Lawyer vnder the storie of Battus: haue described a noted vnthrift, whose subftaunce hawkes and hounds haue deuoured, in the tale of Asleon, that was eaten vp / by his owne dogges: mockt Alcumiftes with Midas: picturede inamaratos vnnder Narcissus: and shrouded a picked effeminate Carpet Knight vnder the fictionate perfon of Hermophroditus; with a thousand more such vnexileable ouer-thwart merrimentes, if luft had not led him beyond the prospect of his birth, or hee seene a meaner man finning than an Emperour.

Sancta Maria ora pro nobis, how hath my pen loft it selfe in a croude of Poets.

Gaffer lobbernoule, once more well ouer-taken, how doft thou? how doft thou? holde vp thy heade, man, take no care: though Greene be dead, yet I may liue to doe thee good.
But by the meanes of his death thou art depreied of the remedie in lawe, which thou intendedst to have against him, for calling thy father Ropemaker. Mas, thats true: what action will it beare? Nihil pro nihilo, none in law: what it will doe vpon the stage I cannot tell; for there a man maye make action besides his part, when he hath nothing at all to say: and if there, it is but a clownish action that it will beare: for what can bee made of a Ropemaker more than a Clowne? Will Kempe, I mistrust it will fall to thy lot for a merriment, one of these dayes.

In short tearmes, thus I demur vpon thy long Kentish-tayld declaration against Greene.

Hee inherited more vertues than vices: a iolly long red peake, like the spire of a steeple, hee cherisht continually without cutting, whereat a man might hang a Iewell, it was so sharpe and pendant.

Why should art answyer for the infirmities of maners? Hee had his faultes, and thou thy follyes.

Debt and deadly finne, who is not subiect to? With / any notorious crime I neuer knew him tainted; (& yet tainting is no infamous surgerie for him that hath beene in so many hote skirmishes).

A good fellowe hee was, and would haue drunke
with thee for more angels then the Lord thou libeldst on gaue thee in Christs Colledge; and in one yeare hee pist as much against the walls, as thou and thy two brothers spent in three.

In a night & a day would he haue yarkt vp a Pamphlet as well as in seaven yeare, and glad was that Printer that might bee so blest to pay him deare for the very dregs of his wit.

Hee made no account of winning credite by his workes, as thou doft, that doft no good workes, but thinkes to bee famosed by a strong faith of thine owne worthines: his onely care was to haue a spel in his purse to coniure vp a good cup of wine with at all times.

For the lowfie circumstance of his pouerty before his death, and sending that miserable writte to his wife, it cannot be but thou lyeft, learned Gabriell.

I and one of my fellowes, Will Monox (Haft thou neuer heard of him and his great dagger?) were in company with him a month before he died, at that fatall banquet of Rhenish wine and pickled hearing (if thou wilt needs haue it so) and then the inuentorie of his apparrell came to more than three shillings (though thou faift the contrarie). I know a Broker, in a spruce leather jerkin with a great number of golde Rings on his fingers, and a bunch of keies at his girdle, shall
giue you thirty shillings for the doublet alone, if you can helpe him to it. Harke in your eare, hee had a very faire Cloake with fleeues, of a graue goose turd greene: it would serue you as fine as may bee: No more words if you bee wise, play the good husband / and listen after it, you may buy it ten shillings better cheape than it cost him. By S. Siluer, it is good to bee circumspect in casting for the worlde, theres a great many ropes go to ten shillings. If you want a greasy paire of silke stockings also, to shew yourselfe in at the Court, they are to be had too amongt his mueables. *Frustra fit per plura quod fieri potest per pauciora*: It is policie to take a rich penniworth whiles it is offered.

*Alas euen his fellow writer, that proper yoong man,* almost scorns to cope with thee, thou art such a crow troden Ass: dost thou *in some respects with him well and spare his name?* in some respects doth hee with thee as well? (*hoc est*, to be as well knowne for a foole as my Lord *Welles*) and promiseth by me to talke very sparingly of thy praisfe. For thy name, hee will not stoupe to plucke it out of the mire, and put it in his mouth.

By this blessed cuppe of sake which I now holde in my hand, and drinke to the health of all Christen soules in, thou art a puissant Epitapher.

*Yea? thy Mufes foot of the twelues;* old long
Meg of Westminster? Then, I trowe thou wilt stride ouer *Greene*s graue and not stumble: If you doe, wee shall come to your taking vp.

**Letter.**

*Here lies the man whom Mistris Ifam crownd with bays,*  
*She she that ioyd to heare her nightingales sweeete lays.*

**Comment.**

*Here Mistris Ifam; Gabriel floutes thy bays:*  
Scratch out his eyes that printeth thy dispraise.

*She she she will scratch, and like a scritching night-owle come and make a dismal noife vnder thy chamber / windowe, for deriding her so dunstically. A bigge fat lufty wench it is, that hath an arme like an Amazon, and will bang thee abhominationly, if euer shee catch thee in her quarters. It is not your Poet Garish, and your forehorse of the parish that shall redeeme you from her fingers, but shee will make actuall proffe of you, according as you desire of God in the vnder following lines.*

The next weeke, Maister *Bird* (if his inke-pot haue a cleare current) hee will haue at you with a cap-case full of French occurrences, that is, shpe you a meffe of newes out of the second course of his conceit, as his brother is said out of the fabulous
abundance of his braine to have inuented the newes out of Calabria (John Doletas prophesie of flying dragons, commets, Earthquakes, and inundations).

I am sure it is not yet wore out of mens scorn, for every Miller made a comment of it, and not an oyster wife but mockt it.

When that fly-boat of Frenchery is once launcht, your trenchor attendant, Gamaliel Hobgoblin, intends to tickle vp a Treatife of the barly kurnell, which you set in your garden, out of which there sprung (as you auouched) twelue feuerall ears of corne at one time.

Redoubted Parma was neuer so matcht if hee kindle the match of his meeterdome, and let drive at him with a volley of verses. Let not his principalitie trust too much to it, because his name is Latin for a shield; for Poet Hobbinoll, hauing a gallant wit and a brazen penne, will honourably bethinke him, and even ambitiously frame his style to a noble emulation of Liuie, Homer and the divinest spirites of all ages, as hee hath done to the emulation of Tullie heeretofore, when hee com/piled a Pamphlet called Ciceronis Consolatio ad Dolobelam, and publisht it as a newe part of Tullie, which had bin hidde in a Wall a thousand and odde yeares, and was found out by him before it euer found beeing.
The circumstance was this; going downe the water at Cambridge one summer euening, and asking certayne questions of the Eccho at Barnewell wall (as the manner is paffing by) holding her verie narrowly to the poyn, she revealed vnto him what a treasure shee had hidden amongst her stones; namely, this new part of *Gabrielis Ciceronis conso- latio ad Dolobellam*: and though she was verie loath to disclose it, yet because shee knewe not how soone God might call her; *videlicet*, how sodainely shee might fall; to discharge her conscience before her death, shee would deliuer it vp as freely vnto him as euer it was hers: come and digge for it, hee shoulde haue it. Neuer more glad was shee in her life, that since shee muft needes surrender it to the light, she had chaunft vpon such a Cardinall Corrigidore of incongruitie, and Tullies nexte and immediate succeffour, vnder Carre, to whose carefull repolishing she might commit it. Keepe it, quoth she?

No, if it were a booke of golde it is *thine*: reade it, new print it, dedicate it *from thy gallery at Trinitie Hall* to whom thou wilt.

Whether hee vilde a spade or a mattocke for the unburying of it I know not, but extant it is, and of a hundred I haue heard that it is his.

O Gabriell, if thou haft any manhood in thy starcht peake, looke vpon me and weepe not.
From this day forward shall a whole armie of boies come / wondering about thee, as thou goest in the street, and cry kullesoo, kullesoo, with whup hoo, there goes the Ape of Tully: thine he he, steale Tully, steale Tully, away with the Ass in the Lions skinne.

Nay, but in sadnesse, is it not a sinfull thing for a Scholler & a Christian to turne Tully? a Turke would never doe it.

Be counsaileld in thy calamitie, write no more Consolatios ad Dolabellam, but Consolatio ad Doctor Gabrielem; thy selfe comfort thy selfe, and learn to make a vertue of contempt.

Ad ruentem parietem ne inclina, is a proverbe which would haue prevented all this, if thou couldst haue suffered thy selfe to haue beene directed by it: for first and foremost, hadst not thou stept forth to vnder-prop the ruinous wall of thy brothers reputation, I had never medled with thee; if thou hadst not leaned too much to an old wall, when thou pluckest Tullie out of a wall, the damnation of this left had bin yet vnbegetten.

He that hath borne faile in two tempests of shame, makes a sport of shippe-wracke of good name euer after.

The wall of the welfare of France that is started from her King, her true foundation, thy writinges, (more wretched than France) would
faine cleaue vnto, if they could tell how, and count it a felicity to haue the oportunitie of so heroicall an argument.

God helpe Alexander, if hee haue no other Poet to emblazon his atchieuements but Cherillus.

High resolued Earle of Essex, and victorious Sir John Norris, Englands champions, enuied tranquillities confidence, vnworthy are your adventures Iliades to bee reported by such a ragged reede as the iar/ring Pipe of this Batillus. The Portugals & Frenchmens feare will lend your Honors richer ornaments, than his low-flighted affection (fortunes summer follower) can frame them.

The seale that I haue set to your vertues be silence; the argument of prayse is vnauthorized in any mans mouth but olde age.

When the better parte of youthes servuence is boyld away, and that the showres of many sorrowes haue seafond our greene heads with experience, with the wither-fac'd weather-beaten Mariner, that talks quaking and shudderingly of a storme that hee hath newly toyld through, our wordes will bee written in our vifage.

Euen as the sunne, so no science shines in his compleate glory till it be ready to decline.

These be the conclusions, that gray hairs prune & cut downe the prosperitie of yong yeares with as faft as it aspires, but let the feare Oake looke
himselfe in the glasse of truth, and he shal find that Methusalems blessing is imbecillitie, bestowed on any creature but the Foxe, who neuer is a right Foxe till he be ripe for the dunghill.

If my file holde on this sober Mules pace but a sheete or two further, I shal haue a long beard lyke an Irish mantle, droppe out of my mouth before I be aware.

Marry God forfend, for at no hand can I endure to haue my cheeks muffled vp in furre like a Muscouian, or weare any of this Welch freeze on my face.

O it is a miserable thing to dreffe haire like towe twixt a mans teeth, when one cannot drinke but hee muft thruft a great spunge into the cup, & so cleanse his coole porridge, as it were, through a strayner ere it / comes to his lippes.

This second Epistle I haue said prettily well too: I thinke we were best begin thirdly whereas, for feare a volume steale vpon vs vnlookt for.
CONFUTED.

The Arrainment and Execution of the Third Letter.

To euerie Reader faavourably or indifferently affected.

Text, stand to the Barre. Peace there belowe.

Albeit for these twelue or thirteene yeares no man hath beene more loath, or more scrupulous than my selfe, &c.

The body of mee, hee begins like a proclaamation: sufficeth it wee knowe you, your minde, though you say no more.

Is not this your drift? you would haue the worlde suppone you were vrgde to that which proceeded of your owne good nature: like some that will seeme to bee intreated to take a high place of preferment vpon them, which priuilie before they haue prayde and payde for, and put all their strength to clymbe vp to.

You would foist in non causam pro causa, haue it thought your flight from your olde companions obscuritie and silence, was onely, with Aeneas, to carry your Father on your backe, through the fire of slander, and by that shift, with a false plea of patience, vnjuftly driuen from his kingdome, filch a way the harts of the Queenes liege people.

The backe of those creple excuses I haue broke in / the beginning of my booke: if you haue anie new infringement to deftitute the inditement of forgerie that I bring against you, so it is.
Heere enters Argumentum a testimonio humano, like Tamberlaine drawne in a chariot by foure Kings.

I that in my youth flatterd not my selfe with the exceeding commendation of the greatest scholler in the world, &c.

Ille ego qui quondam gracili modulatus auena.

Ah neighbourhood, neighbourhood, dead and buried art thou with Robinhood: a poore creature here is faine to commend himselfe, for want of friendes to speake for him.

Not the leaft, but the greatest Schollers in the world haue not only but exceedingly fedde him fat in his humor of Braggadochio Gloriofo.

Yea Spencer him hath often Homer tearmd,
And Mounfer Bodkin vowed as much as he;
Yet cares not Nashe for him a halfepony.

Lamentable, lamentable, that an indifferent vn-toward ciuill Lawyer, who hath read Plutarch de vtilitate capienda ab inimicis, &c can talke of Titius and Sempronius, shou'd be no more set by, but set by, thruft aside, while his betters carry the bredth of the street before them.

Misery will humble the haughtiest heart in the world: Habemus reum confitente: he confesseth himself a sinner in vnsufficiency; yet for all that
the aduerfitie of vniversal obloquy hath laide a heauie hande on him, still he retaineth (like concealed land) some part of his proud mind in a beggers purfe, scorneth to say Fortune my foe, or afke a good word for Gods sake of anie man.

In the plainesse of his puff vp nature, he will defie anie man that dare accuse him of that he is.

Why, why infractifisme PISTLEPRAGMOS, though you were yong in yeares, fresh in courage, greene in experience, and ouer-weaning in concept (we will refufe nothing that you glue vs) when you pri- uately wrote the letters that afterward (by no other but your felse) were publiquely diuulged; yet when the bladder is burft that held you vp swimming in felse loue, you muft not be discontented though you sink.

I haue toucht the vlcer of your Oratourship, in requiting the nick-name of The Devils Oratour. An Vlcer you may well chriften it, as an vlcer is afwelling, for it was a fwelling of ambition, no modest petition of anie merit of yours that did craue it.

The olde Foxe Doctour Perne throughly dis- covered you for a yoong Soppe, or else halfe a word of our high Chauncelors commendation had stood with him inuiolable as an Act of Parliament.

Great men, in writing to those they are ac- quainted with, haue priuie watch-wordes of
denyall, euen in the higheft degree of praising; they haue many followers, whose dutifull seruice muft not bee disgrac'd with a bitter repulse in anie fuitie, though vnlawfull.

It may bee, some of these long deseruers of his followers labourd him for thee: hee, like Argus, hauing eyes that pierce into all estates, saw thee when thou Wert vnfeene of thy felfe, and knowing thee to bee vnworthy / of any place of worth, would not discountenance his men in so smal a matter, but writ for thee very vehemently out-wardly, when the soule of his letter (into which thy shallowe braine could not descend) included thy utter mislike.

Young bloud is hot, youth haftie, ingenuitie open, abuse impatient, choller stomachous, temptations busie. In a word, the Gentleman was vext, and cutte his bridle for verie anger.

The tickling and stirring ineffectuue vaine, the puffing and swelling Satiricall spirit came vpon him, as it came vpon Coppinger and A[r]thington, when they mounted into the pease-cart in Cheape-side and preacht: needes hee muft cast vp certaine crude humours of English Hexameter Verfes that lay vpon his stomacke: a Noble-man stoode in his way, as he was vomiting, and from top to toe he all to berayd him with Tuscanisme.

The Mappe of Cambridge lay not farre off
when he was in the depth of his drudgery, some part of the excrements of his anger fell vpon it: poor Doctour Perres picture stooede in a corner of that Mappe, and by the misdemeanour of his mouth it was cleane defac’d.

Signior Immerito (so called because he was and is his friend undeservedly) was counterfeitley brought in to play a part in that his Enterlude of Epiftles that was hitst at, thinking his very name (as the name of Ned Allen on the common stage) was able to make an ill matter good.

I durft on my credit and undertake, Spencer was no way priuie to the committing of them to the print. Committing I may well call it, for in my opinion G. H. should not haue reapt so much discredite by beeing com/mitted to Newgate, as by committing that misbeleeuing prose to the Press.

I haue vsually seene uncircumcised doltage haue the porch of his Panim pilfries very hugely pestred with praiyes. Hay gee (Gentlemen) comes in with his Plowmans whistle in prayse of Peter Scurfe the penne-man, and Turlery Ginkes, in a light foote Ligge, libels in commendation of little witte verie loftily; but for an Author to renounce his Christendome to write in his owne commendation, to refuse the name which his Godfathers and Godmothers gaue him in his baptisme, and call himselfe a well-willer to both the writers, when hee is the onely
FOURE LETTERS

writer himselfe; with what face doe you thinke he can aunswere it at the day of judgement? *Eft in te facies sunt apti lusibus anni:* Gabriell, thou canst play at faft and loose as well as anie man in England.

I will not lye and backbite thee as thou hast done mee, but are not these thy wordes to the curteous Buyer?

Shew mee or Immerito, *two English letters in print, in all pointes equall to these,* both for the matter it selfe, and also for the manner of handling, and say wee never saw good English in our lunes.

Againe, I esteeme them for *two of the rarest and finest treaties,* as well for ingenuous devising, as significat uttering, & cleanly conveyeng of his matter, that ever I read in this tongue, & I hartily thank God for bestowing upon vs such proper and able men with their penne.

You must conceit, hee was his chamber-fellowe welwillers cloke, when he spake this: the white-liuerd slaue was modest, and had not the hart to saie so much in his owne person, but he must put on the vizard of an undiscreete friend.

It is not worth the rehearsal: *he scribled it in ieast for exercise of his speech and stile,* &c., and it was the finister hap of those unfortunate letters to be derided & scoff at throughout the whole realme.

The sharpest part of them were read over at
Counsell Table, and he referd ouer to the Fleet, to beare his old verfe-fellow noble M. Valanger company.

There was no remedie for it but melancholy patience.

A recantation he was glad to make by way of articles or positions, which hee moderates with a milder name of an apologie, & that recantation purchaft his libertie. Wherefore in grateful lieu of the benefit he receiu'd by it (although he hath hitherto vnworthily suppress it) yet he means to take occasion by this extraordinary provocation to publish it, with not fo few asfortie such Academicall exercises, and sundrie other politike discourses.

And I deeme he will be as good as his word, for euer yet it hath beene his wont, if he writ but a letter to any friend of his, in the way of thanks for the potte of butter, gámon of bacon, or cheefe that he sent to him, straight to giue coppies of it abroad in the world, and propound it to yong gentlemen he came in company with, as a more necessary & refined methode of familier Epiftles than the English tongue had hitherto been priuie to.

Lord that men shoulde bee so malitiously bent to frame a matter of some thing: he takes a pleasurable delight to behaue himself so that he may be laught at: how would you prate and insult, if you knewe as much by him, as he knows by himselfe.
Nashe, do thy worst, the three brothers bid a Fico for thee: discommend thou them never so much, they will palpably praise, and so consequently dispraise, / themselves more in one booke they set foorth, than thou canst disparage them in tenne: yea, rather than fail, Master Bird shall leave copying out letters of newes, and meeter it mischieuously in maintenance of their scurrilitiship and ruditie.

Three to one, par ma foy, is oddes: not one of them writes an Almanacke, but hee reckons vp all his brothers.

Bee it spoken heere in priuate, Musa Richardetti fratrizat dat bene pretty: the Muse of dappert Dickie doth sing as sweet as a cricket.

Nosì manum & stilum, Gabriel? it is thine owne verse in Ædes Valdinenses, all saue the inserting of pretty instead of certè, for rimes fake.

Had phisition John liu'd, or not dyde, a little afore Dog-dayes, a sinode of Pispots would haue concluded, that Pierce Pennileffe shoule be confouded without repriue.

The Spanyards cald their inuasifve fleete agaynst England the Nauie invincible, yet it was overcome. Lowe shrubbes haue outliu'd high Cedars: one true man is stronger than two thecues: Gabriell & Richard, I proclaime open warres with you: March on, Iocus, Ludus, Lepos, my valiaunt men
at armes, and forrage the frontiers of his Fantasicalitie as you have begun.

Tubalcan, alias Tuball, first founder of Farriers Hall, here is a great complaint made, that vtriusque Academie Robertus Greene hath mockt thee, because thee faide, that thou wert the first inuenter of Musicke: so Gabriell Howliglafe was the first inuenter of English Hexameter verses. Quid respondes? canst thou brooke it, yea or no? Is it any treason to thy well tuned hammers to say they begat so renowned a childe as Musicke? Neither thy hammers nor thou, I know, if they were put to their booke oaths, will ever say it.

The Hexameter verse, I graunt to be a Gentleman of an auncient house (so is many an English begger), yet this Clyme of ours hee cannot thrive in; our speech is too craggy for him to set his plough in: hee goes twitching and hopping in our language like a man running upon quagmiers, vp the hill in one Syllable, and down the dale in another, retaining no part of that stately smooth gate, which he vaunts himselfe with amongst the Greeks and Latins.

Homer and Virgil, two valorous Authors, yet were they neuer knighted: they wrote in Hexameter verses: Ergo, Chaucer, and Spencer, the Homer and Virgil of England, were farre ouerseene that they wrote not all their Poems in Hexameter verses also.
In many Countries velvet and Satten is a commoner weare than cloth among vs: Ergo, wee must leaue wearing of cloth, and goe euerie one in velvet and fatten, because other Countries vs e fo.

The text will not beare it, good Gilgiliis Hobber-dehoy.

Our english tongue is nothing too good, but too bad to imitate the Greeke and Latine.

Mafter Stannyhurst (though otherwise learned) trod a foule lumbring boyfrinous wallowing meafure, in his translation of Virgil. He had neuer been praifd by Gabriel for his labour, if therein hee had not bin fo famoufly absurd.

Greene for dispraifing his practife in that kinde, is the Greene Maiſter of the blacke Art, the founder of vglie oathes, the father of misbegotten Infortunatus, the scrivener of Crossebiters, the Patriark of Shifters, &c. The Monarch of Crossebiters, the wretched fellowe Prince / of Beggars: Emperour of Shifters, hee had cald him before, but like a drunken man, that remembers not in the morning what he speakes ouer night, ftil he fetcheth Metaphors from conny-catchers, & doth nothing but torment vs with tautologies.

Why thou arrant butter whore, thou cotqueane & scrattop of scoldes, wilt thou neuer leaue afflicting a dead Carcafse, continually read the rethorick
lecture of Ramme Allie? a wispe, a wispe, rippe, rippe, you kitchin-stuffe wrangler!

Wert thou put in the Fleete for pamphleting? Bedlem were a meeter place for thee. Be not ashamed of your promotion: they did you honor that said you were Fleete-bound, for men of honor haue failde in that Fleete.

Waft paper made thee betake thy selfe to Limbo Patrum: had it beene a booke that had beene vendible yet, the opprobry had beene the leffe, but for Chandlers merchandize to be so massacred, for sheets that serue for nothing but to wrappe the excrements of hußwiuerie in, Proh Deum, what a spite is it. I haue seene your name cutte with a knife in a wall of the Fleete, I, when I went to visit a friend of mine there.

Let Maister Butler of Cambridge, his testimonial end this controuersie, who at that time that thy ioyes were in the Fleeting, and thou crying for the Lords fake out at an iron windowe, in a lane not farre from Ludgate hill, questioned some of his companions verie inquisituelie that were newlie come from London, what nouelties they brought home with them, amongst the rest, he broke into this Hexamiter interrogatorie very abruptlie,

But ah what newes doe you heare of that good Gabriel huffe fnuffe, Knowne to the world for a foole, and clapt in the Fleete for a Rimer.
Ift true Gibraltar? haue I found you? It was not without foundation that you burst into that magnifical insultation,—I that in my yovth flattered not my selfe, &c.,—for M. Butler, for a Phifition being none of the leaft Schollers, hath commended you exceedingly for a foole & a Rimer. He that threatened to conjure vp Martins wit, hath written some thing too, in your praife, in Paphhatchet: for all you accuse him to haue courtlie incenft the Earle of Oxford againft you. Marke him well: hee is but a little fellow, but hee hath one of the best wits in England. Should he take thee in hand againe (as he flieth from such inferiour concertation), I prophecie that there woulde more gentle Readers die of a merrie mortality, ingendred by the eternall iefts he would maule thee with, than there haue done of this laft infection. I my self, that inioy but a mite of wit in com- parifon of his talët, in pure affection to my native country, make my stile carry a prefTe faile, am fain to cut off half the streame of thy sport-breeding confusion, for feare it shoulde cause a generall hicket throughout England.

Greene, I can spare thy reuenge no more roome in this booke: thou haft Phifition John with thee; cope thou with him, & let me alone with the Ciulian & Deuine, whom, if I liue, I will fo vn- ceffantly haunt, that to auoid the hot chafe of my
fieric quill, they shalbe conftraind to enfconfe them-
selves in an olde Vrinall case that their brother
left behind him. Yet ere I bid thee good night,
receive some notes as touching his phificallity
decased. *He had his grace to be Doctor ere he died.*
As time may worke all things. *In Norfolke where
hee practised, he was reputed a proper toward man
at a medicine for the toothake, & one of the skiffullest
Phisitions, in caffing the heauens water, that euer
came there.*

How well beloued of the chiefeft Gentlemen (*&
Gentlewomen especially*) in that shire, it is incredible
to bee spoken. *Astra petit disertus:* hee is gone
to heauen to write more Astrologicall discourses:
his brothers liue to inherite his olde gownes, and
remember his notable sayings, amongst the which
was one: *Vale Galene,* farewell, mine owne deare
Gabriell: *Valete humane artes,* heart and good
will, but neuer a ragge of money.

*Tunc tua res agitur paries cum proximus ardet.*
Cloth-breeches house is burnt, and the flame
goes a feasting to *Pierce Penileffe* house next.

Neuer til now, *Gregory Habberdine,* went thy
foure letters vp Newgate, vp Holburne, vp Tiburne,
to hanging.

Gentlemen, by that which hath been already
laid open, I doe not doubt but you are vnwaueringly
resolved, this indigested Chaos of Doctour-

**CONFUTED.**

241
ship, and greedy pothunter after applause, is an apparent Publican and sinner, a selfe-loue surfeitted fot, a broken-winded galdbacke Iade, that hath borne vp his head in his time, but now is quite foundred & tired; a scholler in nothing but the scum of schollership, a stale soker at Tullies Offices, the droane of droanes, and maifter drumble-bee of non proficients. What hath he wrote but hath had a wofull end? When did he dispute but hee duld all his auditorie? his Poetry more spiritleffe than smal beere, his Oratory Arts bastard, not able to make a man rauishingly weepe, that hath an Onion at his eye. In Latin, like a loufe, he hath manie legges, many lockes fleec'd from Tullie, to carry away and cloath a little body of matter, but yet hee moues but slowly, is apparailed verie poorely.

In English, ice is not so cold, yet on the ice of ignorance/will he slide. No wise man pittie him that perisheth so wilfully.

Judge the world, judge the highest Courts of appeale from the miscarried worlds judgement (Cambridge and Oxford) wherein I haue trespassed in Pierce Pennileffe, that hee shoule talke of gnashing of teeth, yong Phaetons, yong Icari, yong Chorebi, yong Babingtons.

Neuer was I in earneft, til thus he twitted me with the comparison of a traitour.
Babington, high was thy birth, I a bondflaue of fortune in comparison of thee: thy fall greater than Phaetons, thy offence as heynous as Iudas. May never more such foule seeds of offence be sowne in so faire a shape, may they be marke always to mischiefe that meane as thou didst. The braunches of thy stocke remains yet un-blasted with anie disobedience. God forbid that our forheades shoulde euer bee blotted with our forefathers misdemeanors. Die, ill deeds, with your vngratious ill doers: the liuing haue no portion with the dead: hell once paid his due, heauen gates are open to succeeding posteritie.

Prate of Pierce Penneleffe and his paltrie as long as thou wilt, I will play at put-pinne with thee for all that thou art woorth, but of thy betters gette thee a better discoursing penne before thou descantes of,

L. Greenes inwardest companion pinched with want, vexed with discredit, tormented with other mens felicitie, and overwhelmed with his own miserie, in a rauing and frantike moode, most desperately exhibiteth a Supplication to the Deuill.

C. Heerein thou thinkest thou haft won the spurs from all writers, but God and Dame Fiction knows thou/art farre wide of thy ayme; for neither was I Greenes companion any more than for a carowse or two, nor pincht with any vn-
gentleman-like want when I inuented Pierce Pennileffe.

*Pauper non est cui rerum suppetit vsus:* only the discontented meditation of learning, generally now a dayes little valued, and her professours set at naught & dishartened, caused mee to handle that plaintife subiect more seriously.

*Vext with discredit* (Gabriel) I neuer was, as thou haft beene euer since *Familiaritas peperit contemptu,* thy familiar epiftles brought thee into contempt.

Though I haue beene pincht with want (as who is not one time or another, *Pierce Pennileffe*) yet my mufe neuer wept for want of maintenance as thine did in *Mufarum lachrimæ,* that was miserably flouted at in M. Winkfields *Comœdie of Pedantius* in Trinitie Colledge.

How am I tormented with other mens felicitie, otherwise the saying, I know a Cobler that was worth fие hundred pound, an hostler that had built a goodly Inne, & might dispand forty pound yearly by his land, a Carman that had whipt a thousand pound out of his horfe taile; if I had likewise reckond vp a ropemaker, that by tormenting of hempe, & going backward (which the Deuill would nere doe) had turnd as many Mill fixpences over the thumbe, as kept three of his fones at Cambridge a long time, & that which is more, three proud fones, that when they met the
hangman (their Fathers best chapman) would scarce put of their hats to him, why then thou shouldst haue had some colour of quarell: thy accusatiō might justly haue enterd his title pro aris et focis, whereas now it is frivolous and forcelesse.

The / sharpest wits, I perceive, haue none of the best memories: if they had, thou wouldst nere haue toucht mee with tormenting my selfe with other mens felicitie; for how didst thou torment thyselfe with other mens felicitie when in the 28 page of thy first tome of Epiftles, thou exclamst, that in no age so little was so much made of, nothing aduaunft to be something, Numbers made of Ciphars, that is, by interpretatiō, all those that were aduaunft either in the Court or commonwealth at that time, had little to commend them, nothing in account worthy preferment, but were meere meacocks & Ciphars in comparison of thy excellent out-caft selfe that liudst in Cambridge vnmounted.

Hang thee, hang thee, thou common coofer of curteous readers, thou groffe shifter for shitten tapsterly iefts, haue I imitated Tarltons play of the seaven deadly sinnes in my plot of Pierce Penileffe? whom haft thou not imitated then in the course of thy booke? thou haft borrowed aboue twenty phraifes and epithites from mee, which in sober sadnesse thou makft vse of as thy owne, when thou wouldst exhort more effectuall.
Is it lawfull but for one preacher to preach of the ten commandements? hath none writ of the fiue senes but Aristotle? was sinne so utterly abolished with Tarlons play of the seuen deadly fins, that ther could be nothing said supra of that argument?

Canst thou exemplifie vnto mee (thou impotent moate-catching carper) one minnum of the particular deuice of his play that I purloind? There be manie men of one name that are nothing a kindred. Is there any further distribution of fins, not shadowed vnder these 7 large spreading branches of iniquity, on which a man may worke, and not tread on Tarletons heelles? / If not, what blemish is it to Pierce Pennileffe to begin where the Stage doth ende, to build vertue a Church on that foundation that the Deuill built his Chappell?

Gabriell, if there be anie witte or industrie in thee, now I will dare it to the vtermost: write of what thou wilt, in what language thou wilt, and I will confute it and answere it. Take truths part, and I wil proue truth to be no truth, marching out of thy dug-voiding mouth.

Diuinitie I except, which admits no dalliance: but in any other art or profeccion, of which I am not yet free, and thou shalt challenge me to trie maiftries in, Ile bind my selfe Prentisfe too, and studie throughly, though it neuer stand mee in
any other stead while I liue, but to make one reply, only because I wil haue the last word of thee.

I would count it the greatest punishment that *In speech* could lay vpon mee, to be bound to studie the Danifh tongue, which is able to make any Englishman haue the mumpes in his mouth, that shall but plunge through one full point of it, yet the Danifh tongue, or any Turks, or hogs or dogs tongue whatfoeuer, would I learne rather than bee put downe by such a ribauldry Don Diego as thou art.

Heigh drawer, fill vs a fresh quart of new-found phraſes, since Gabriell faies we borrow all our eloquence from Tauerns: but let it be of the mighty Burdeaux grape, pure *vino de monte*, I coniure thee, by the fame token that the Deuils dauncing schoole in the bottome of a mans purse that is emptie, hath beene a gray-beard Prouerbe two hundred yeares before Tarlton was borne: Ergo, no gramercy, Dicke Tarlton. But the summe of summes is this, I drinke to you, M. Gabriell, on that condition, that you shall not excruciate your braine to be conceited, and haue no wit.

Since we are here, on our prating bench in a close roome, and that there is none in company but you, my approoued good friends, foure Letters
and certain Sonnets, your Pages, I will rehearse unto you some part of the Methode of my demeanour in Pierce Pennileffe.

First, in so much as the principall scope of it is a most liuelie anatomic of sinne, the diuell is made speciall superuisor of it, to him it is dedicated: as if a man shoulde compile a curious examined discouerie of whoredome, and dedicate it to the quarter Maisters of Bridewell, because they are best able to punish it.

Wherfore as there is no fire without some smoke, no complaint without some precedent cause of aggreeuance, I introduce a discontented Scholler vnnder the person of Pierce Pennileffe, tragicallie exclaiming vpon his partial-eid fortune, that kept an Almes boxe of compassion in store for every one but himselfe. He tells how he tost his imagination like a dogge in a blanket, searcht euery corner of the house of Charitie, to see if he could light on any that would set a new nappe of an old threedbare Cloake: but, like him that hauing a letter to deliuer to a Scottish Lorde, when hee came to his house to enquire for him, found no bodie at home but an ape that sat in the Porch and made mops and mows at him; so he, deliuering his vnperufde papers in Powles Churchyard, the first that took them vp was the Ape Gabriel, who made mops and mows at them,
blauering the outside of them a little, but could not enter into the contents, which was an ase beyonde his vnderstanding.

With / the first and second leafe hee plaies verie pretillie, and in ordinarie termes of extenuating, verdits Pierce Pennileffe for a Grammar Schoole wit; saies his Margine is as deeplie learnd as Faufte præcor gelida, that his Myfe jobbeth and groneth verie piteouſlie, bids him not caſt himself headlong into the horrible gulph of desperation, comes over him that hee is a creature of wonderfull hope, as his own inspired courage divinely suggeſstheth, wils him to inchaunt some magnificent Mecenas, to honour himſelfe in honouring him, with a hundred fuch grace-wanting Ironies, cutte out against the woll, that woulde ieopard the beſt ioint of Poetica Licentia to procure laughter, when there crinckled crabbed countenance (the verie resemblance of a sodden dogges face) hath ſworne it woulde neuer confent thereunto.

Not the moſt exquiffite thing that is, but the Couſel Table Asſe, Richard Clarke, may fo Car- terly deride.

Euerie milke-maide can gird with Ift true? How faie you lo? who would haue thought it? Good Beare, bite not? A man is a man, though hee hath but a hose on his head.

No fuch light paiment, Gabriel, haſt thou at my
hands: I tell thee where, when, and how thou shew'dst thy selfe a Dunsiuall.

Onely externall defects thou casts in my dish: nothing internall in thee, but I prooue that it is altogether excrementall.

A fewe Elegiacall verfes of mine thou plucke'st in pieces moft ruthfullie, and quotes them against mee as advantageable, together with some dismembred Margine notes, but all is inke cast away, you recouer no costs and charges. With one minutes study Ile distroie more, than thou art able to build in ten daies.

Squeife/thy hart into thy inkehorne, and it shall but congeal into clodderd garbage of confutatio, thy soule hath no effects of a soule, thou canst not sprinkle it into a sentence, & make euerie line leape like a cup of neat wine new powred out, as an Orator muft doe that lies aright in wait for mens affectiones.

Whome haft thou wonne to hate mee by light crawling ouer my Text like a Cankerworme?

Some superficial slime of poifon haft thou drueld from thy pen in thy shallow footed sliding through my Supplication, which one pen ful of repurified inke will exceluelie wash out. Shall I informe thee (that vnfruitfullie endeavou'r to informe authoritie against me) why I infixed those Poeticall latine marget notes to some fewe pages in the beginning
of *Pierce Pennileffe*? I did it to explaine to such expected spiefaults as thou art, that it was no vncouth abhorrencie from the custome of former writers, for a man openly to bewaile his vndeserued destenie.

In the vncazing of thy brother *Richard*, I calculated the Natiuitie of the *Astrological Discourse*: I apparentlie suggested what a lewd piece of Prophecie it was: I registred the infinite scorne that the whole Realme entertaind it with, the Adages that ran vpon it, *Taritons* and *Eldertons nigrum* THETA set to it, yet wilt thou, that art the fonne and heire to shamelesse impudence, the vnlineall vfurper of iudgement from all his true owners, the *HOYDEN* and pointing ftock recreation of Trinitie hall, *Vanitas vanitatis & omnia vanitas*, inuest that in the higheft throne of Art and Schollerfsip, which a scrutinie of so manie millions of wel discerning condemnations hath concluded to be viler than newesmungrie, & that which is vileft of all, no leffe vile than thy Epiftles.

Most / voices, most voices, most voices; who is on my fide who? Whether is the *Astrological Discourse* a better booke than *Pierce Pennileffe*? Gabriel hangtelow faiies it is: I am the Defendant, and denie it, and yet I doe not ouercull my owne workes: His affertion he countermures him thus:

*Pierce Pennileffe is a man better acquainted with*
the Diuels of hell than the Starres of Heauen: Ergo, the Astrologickall Discourse is better than the notorious diabolicall discourse of Pierce Pennileffe.

Once againe I denie his Argument to bee of lawfull age. Pierce Pennileffe is a better Star-munger than a Diuelmunger, which needeth no other for to corroberate it but this, that my yea, at all times, is as good as his nay.

How is the Supplication a diabolicall Discourse, otherwise than as it intreats of the diuerse natures and properties of Diuils and spirits? in that far fetcht fense may the famous defenfative against supposed Prophecies, and the Discouerie of Witchcraft be called notorious Diabollical discourses, as well as the Supplication, for they also intreate of the illusions and undrie operations of spirits: Likewise may I fay that those his foure Letters nowe on their triall, are foure notorious lowfie Discourses, because they lyingly discourse little else faue Greenes lowfie estate before his death.

M. Churchyard, our old quarrel is renued, when nothing else can bee faftned on mee: this Letter leapper vpbraideth mee with crying you mercie: I cannot tell, but I think you will haue a faying to him for it. Ther's no reason that such a one as he should presume to intermeddle in your matters, it cannot be done with any intent but to stirre mee vp to write againft you afresh, / which nothing
vnder heau’n shall draw mee to doe. I love you vnfainedly, and admire your aged Muse, that may well be grand-mother to our grandeloquentest Poets at this present:

Sanctum & venerabile vetus omne Poema.

Shores wife is yong, though you be stept in yeares, in her shall you liue when you are dead.

For that vnadvised indammagement I haue done you heretofore, He be your champion henceforward against any that dare write against you. Onely as euer you would light vpon a good cuppe of old facke when you are most drie, pocket not vp this sile abuse at a rakehell rampalions hands, one that, when an injurie is deepe buried in the graue of obliuion, shall seeke to digge it vp againe, recall that into mens memories which was consumed and forgotten.

Whoreson Ninhammer, that wilt assault a man & haue no stronger weapons.

The Italian faith, a man muft not take knowledge of injurie till he be able to reuenge it.

Nay but, in plaine good fellowship, art thou so innocent & vnconceiuing that thou shouldft ere hope to dash mee quite out of request by telling mee of the Counter, and my hostesse Penia?

I yeeld that I haue dealt vpon spare commodities of wine and capons in my daies, I haue
fung George Gascoignes Counter-tenor; what then? Wilt thou peremptorily define that it is a place where no honest man, or Gentleman of credit, euer came?

Heare what I say: a Gentleman is neuer throughly entred into credit till he hath beene there; & that Poet, or nouice, be hee what he will, ought to suspeect his wit, and remaie halfe in doubt that it is not authentickall, till it hath beene seene and allowd in vnthrifts/consiftory.

Grande doloris ingenium. Let fooles dwell in no stronger houfes than their Fathers built them, but I proteft I shoulde neuer haue writ passion well, or beene a piece of a Poet, if I had not arriu’d in those quarters.

Trace the gallantest youthes and brauest reuellers about Towne in all the by-paths of their expence, & you shall vnfallibly finde, that once in their life time they haue visited that melancholy habitation.

Come, come: if you will goe to the found truth of it, there is no place of the earth like it, to make a man wise.

Cambridge and Oxford may stande vnder the elbowe of it.

I vow if I had a sonne, I would sooner send him to one of the Counters to learne lawe, than to the Innes of Court or Chauncery.

My hotteffe Penia, thats a bugges word: I pry
thee what Morrall hast thou vnder it? I will depose, if thou wilt, that till now I neuer heard of anie such English name.

There is a certaine thing cald *christian veritie*, & another hight *common senfe*, and a third cleapt *humilitie*: they are more requisite and necessary for thee than *modestie or discretion for mee and my companions*, of which thou shouldest vnderstand, we are so well provided that we can lend thee and thy brother *Richard* a great deale, and yet keepe more than wee shall haue need of for ourselfes.

Wilt thou be so hardy and iron-visaged to gain-say that thy brother Vicars Batchlours hood was not turnd ouer his eares for abusing of *Aristotle*? I know thou haft more grace than so, thou doft not contradict /it flatly, but flubbers it ouer faintly, and comes to recapitulate, not confute some of the phraſes I vſde in the vnhandsomg of his diuinitie.

I my felfe, in the same order of disgracing thou singles them foorth, will haue them vp againe, and fee if thou, or anie man, can absurdifie the worst of them.

I say, and will make it good that in the Astro logicall Discourse thy brother (as if hee had lately cast the heau'ns water, or beene at the anatomizing of the skyes intraires in Surgeons hall) prophesieth of such strange wonders to
ensue from the starres distemperature, and the unusual adulterie of plannets, as none but hee that is bawd to those celestiall bodies, could ever detey.

This too I will ratifie for truthable & legible English, that his Astronomy broke his day with his creditors, and Saturne & Jupiter proud honestest men than all the world tooke them for.

That the whole Universitie hitt at him, Tarlton at the Theater made leaves of him, and Elderton consumed his ale crammed noe to nothing, in beare-baiting him with whole bundels of Ballads.

All this he barely repeates without any disprovement or denudation at all, as if it were so lame in it selfe that it would adnihilate it selfe with the onelie rehearfall of it.

For the gentilitie of the Nashes (though it might seeme a humor borrowed from thee to bragge of it) yet some of vs who neuer fought into it til of late, can proue the extancy of our auncestors before there was ever a ropemaker in England. Wee can vaunt larger petigrees than patrimonies, yet of such extrinsecaall things, common to tenne thousand calues and oxen, would I not willingly vaunt, only it hath pleased M. Printer, both in this booke and Pierce Penileffe, to intaile / a vaine
title to my name, which I care not for, without my consent or priuitie I here auouch.

But on the gentilitie of T. N. his beard, the maifter Butler of Pembroke hall, till I will stand to the death; for it is the very prince Elector of peaks, a beard that I cannot bee perswaded but was the Emperour Dionisius his, surnamed the Tyrant, when hee playde the schoolemaister in Corinth.

Gabriell, thou haft a pretie polwigge sparrowes tayle peake, yet maift thou not compare with his: thy Father, for all by thy owne confeffion hee makes haires, had neuer the art to twilt vp such a grim triangle of haire as that.

Be not offended, honest T. N., that I am thus bold with thee, for I affect thee for the names fake, as much as any one man can do another, and know thee to be a fine fellow, and fit to discharge a farre higher calling than that wherein thou liu'ft.

What more fluffe lurketh behind in this letter to be distributed into shop-duft?

Pierce Pennileffe is as childish and garisfh a booke as ever came in print: when he talks of the sheepish discourse of the Lambe of God and his enemies, he faies, it is monstrous and absurd, and not to bee suffered in a Christian congregatiō; that Richard hath leund ouer the schoolmen, and of the froth of their folly made a dish of Divinitie brewesse, which the Dogs would not eate.

N. II.
If he saide so (as hee did) and can proue it (as hee hath done) by Sainte Lubecke, then The Lambe of God is as childish and garish stuffe as euer came in print, indeede.

I, but how doth Pierce Pennileffe expiate the coinquination of these obiections?

Richard, whom (because hee is his brother, he therefore censures more curious and rigorous, in calling him M. H. than hee would haue done other-wise) red the Philosophie Letteure in Cambridge with good liking and singular commendation, when A per se a was not so much as Idoneus auditor ciuilis scientia, Ergo, the Lambe of God beares a better Fleece than hee giues out it doth.

A per se a is improoued in nothing since, excepting his old Flores Poetarum and Tarletons surmounting rethorique, with a little euphuisme and Greenesse inough.

Gabriel reports him to the fauourablest opinion of those that know A per se a his Prefaces, rimes, and the very timpanie of his Tarltonizing wit, his Supplication to the Diuel.

Quiet your selues a little, my Maisters, and you shal fee me dispearfe all those cloudes well inough. That Richard red the Philosophie Lecture at Cambridge, I doe not withstand, but how?

Verie Lentenlie and scantlie, (farre bee it wee shuld flander him so much as his brother Richard
hath done, to saie he read it with good liking and singularitie). Credite mee, any that hath but a little refuse Colloquium Latine, to interfeame a Lecture with, and can saie but Quapropter vos mei auditores, may reade with equiualent commendation and liking.

I remember him woondrous well. In the chiefe pompe of that his false praise, I both heard him, and heard what was the vniuersall slender valuation of him.

There was eloquent Maister Knox, (a man whose losse all good learning can neuer sufficiently de- plore); twas he and one Maister Jones of Trinitie Colledge, that, in my time, with more speciall approbation conuerft in thofe Readings.

Since / I haue heard of two rare yong men, M. Meriton, and another, that in suppling that place of succession haue surmounted all former mediocritie, and wonne themselues an euerlafting good name in the Vniuersitie.

These thou shouldft haue memoriz'd, if any, but thou art giuen to speake well of none but thy selfe and thy two brothers.

Thrice fruitfull S. Iohns, how many hundred perfecket Schollers than the three brothers haft thou nurft at thy paps, that yet haue not shakte off obscuritie?

Mellifluous Playfere, one of the chief props of
our aged & auntientest, & absolutesf Vniuersities present flourishing. Where doe thy supereminent gifts shine to themselfues, that the Court cannot bee acquainted with them?

Few such men speake out of Fames highest Pulpits, though out of her highest Pulpits speake the purest of all speakers.

Let me adde one word, and let it not bee thought derogatorie to anie. I cannot bethinke mee of two in England in all things comparable to him for his time. Seldome haue I beheld fo pregnant a pleasaunt wit coupled with a memorie of such huge incomprehensible receipt, deepe reading and delight, better mixt than in his Sermons.

Sed quorum hæc, how doe these digressions linke in without subießum circa quod?

Flaunting Richard and his Philosophie Lecture, was vnder our fingers euen now, howsoever wee haue lost him. Hold the candle, and you shall see me cast a figure for him extempore: Oh hoh, I haue founde him without any further seeking. Giue me your eares: Io / Paxan, God faue them, they are long ones.

Now, betweene you and me declare, as if you were at thrift, whether you be not a superlatiue blocke for al you readd the Philosophie Lecture at Cambridge: Brieflie, brieflie: let mee not stand all daie about you.
His conscience accuseth him, hee is stroke starke dumbe; onely by signes he craves to bee admitted in forma pauperis, that we should let him passe for a pore fellow, and he will sell his birthright in learning, with Esau, for a messe of porridge.

Curæ leues loquuntur: he hath but a little cure to look too. Maiores stupent, more liuing would make him studie more.

For this once wee dispence with you, because you looke so penitentlie on it, but let me not catch you selling any more such twife sodden sawdust diuinitie as the Lambe of God and his enemies, for if I do, Ile make a dearth of paper in Pater-nofter-rowe (such as was not this seauen yeare) onelie with writing against thee.

A per se a can doe it: tempt not his clemencie too much. A per se a?

Passion of God, howe came I by that name? My godfather Gabriel gaue it mee, and I muft not refufe it. Nor if you were priuie whence it came would you hold it worthie to be refused; for before I had the reuersion of it hee beflow'd it on a Nobleman, whose new fashiond apparell and Tuscanish gestures, cringing side necke, eies glancing, signomie smerking hauing described to the full, he concludes with this verfe:

Euerie inch A per se a his termes and braueries in print.
Hold you your peace Nashe: that was before you were Idoneus auditor civilis scientiae. It may bee so, for thou wert a Libeller before I was borne. Yet vnder correction bee it spoken, I haue come to the schooles and purg'd rheume in my time, when your brother was Philosophie Lecturer; he wanted no supplosus pedū, to spend away his houre, that I could help him with.

*What since I am improved* you partly haue prooued to your cost; and may doe more at large, if God send vs more leysure.

As for Flores Poetarum, they are flowers that yet I never smelt too. Ile pawne my hand to a halfepenny, I haue read more good Poets thorough than thou euer hardst of.

The flowres of your *Foure Letters* it may be I haue overlookt more narrowlie, and done my best deuoire to assemble them together into patheticall posie, which I will here present to Maister Orator Edge for a Newyeares gift, leauing them to his wordie discretion to be censured, whether they be currant in inkehornisme or no.

*Consciuous mind*: canicular tales: egregious an argument: when as egregious is never vsed in english but in the extreame ill part. Ingenuitie: Iouiall mind: valarous Authors: inkehorne adventures: inkehorne pads: putatiue opinions: putatiue artisfts: energeticall persuasions: Rascallitie: materiallitie:

Nor are these all, for euerie third line hath fome of this over-rackt abſoniſme. Nor do I altogether scum off all these as the newe engendred fome of the Englifh, but allowe fome of them for a neede to fill vp a verfe; as Traynment, and one or two wordes more, which the libertie of profe might well haue spar'd. In a verfe, when a worde of three fillables cannot thruft in but fidelings, to ioyn him euyn, we are oftentimes faine to borrowe fome leſſer quarry of elocution from the Latine, alwaies retaining this for a principle, that a leake of indefinence, as a leake in a fhippe, muſt needly bee ftopt with what matter focuer.

Chaucers authoritie, I am certaine, shalbe alleadgd against me for a many of these balduetums.
Had Chaucer liu’d to this age, I am verily persuaded hee would haue discarded the tone halfe of the harlider fort of them.

They were the Ooufe which ouerflowing barbarisme, withdrawne to her Scottifh Northren chanell, had left behind her. Art, like yong grave in the spring of Chaucers florishing, was glad to peepe vp through any slime of corruption, to be beholding to the car’d not whome for apparaile, trauailing in those colde countries. There is no reason that shee, a banish Queene into this brraine foile, hauing monarchizd it so long amongst the Greeks and Romanes, shoul d(although warres furie had humbled her to some extremitie) still be constrained, when she hath recouerd her state, to weare the robes of aduerstie, iet it in her old rags, when she is wedded to new prosperitie.

Vtere /moribus præteritis, faith Caius Cæsar in Aulus Gellius, loquere verbis præsentibus.

Thou art mine enemie, Gabriell, and, that which is more, a contemptible vnder-foote enemie, or else I would teach thy old Trewantship the true vse of words, as alfo how more inclinable verse is than prose, to dance after the horrizonant pipe of inueterate antiquiteit.

It is no matter, since thou haft brought godly instruction out of loue with thee, vse thy own
boarding, raigne fole Emperour of inkehornifme: I wish vnto thee all superabundant increase of the singular gifts of absurditie, and vaine glory: from this time forth for euer, euer, euer, euermore maift thou be canonized as the Nonparreille of impious epiftlers, the short shredder out of fandy fentences without lime, as Quintillian tearmed Seneca all lime, and no fande, all matter and no circumstance; the factor for the Fairies and night Vrchins, in fup-planting and fetting aside the true children of the English, and suborning inkehorne changlings in their feade, the galemafrier of all ftiles in one fandifh, as imitating euerie one, & hauing no feperate forme of writing of thy owne; and to conclude, the onely feather-driuer of phraifes, and putter of a good word to it when thou haft once got it, that is betwixt this and the Alpes. So bee it worlde without ende. Chroniclers heare my praiers: good Maifter Stowe, be not vnmindfull of him.

Thats well remembred, now I talke of Chroniclers: I founde the Astrologcall discoure the other night in the Chronicle. Gabriell will outface vs, it is a worke of fuch deepe arte & judgement, when it is expressly past vnder record for a coozening prognostication. The wordes are thefe, though somewhat abbreui/ated, for he makes a long circumlocution of it.
In the yeare 1583, by meanes of an Astrologicall discourse vpon the great and notable conjunction of Saturne and Jupiter, the common sort of people were almost driu'n out of their wits, and knew not what to doe; but when no such thing hapned, they fell to their former securitie, and condemned the discouerler of extreme madnesse and follie.

Ipffima sunt Aristotelis verba, they are the verie words of John Tell-troth, in the 1357 folio of the last edition of the great Chronicle of England.

Mehercule quidem, if it be so taken vp, Pierce Pennileffe may cast his cappe after it for euer ouertaking it. But some thing euén now, Gabriell, thou wert girding against my praefaces and rimes, and the timpanie of my Tarltonizing wit.

Well, these be your words, praefaces and rimes: let me studie a little, praefaces and rimes. Minime verò, fi ais nego. I neuer printed rime in my life, but those verses in the beginning of Pierce Pennileffe, though you haue set foorth

The stories quaint of manie a doubtie flie,
That read a lecture to the ventrous elfe.

And so forth as followeth in chambling rowe.

Praefaces two, or a paire of Epiftles, I will receyue into the protection of my parentage: out of both which, sucke out one solaciisme, or mishapen English word, if thou canst for thy guts.
CONPUTED.

Wherein haue I borrowed from Greene or Tarlton, that I should thanke them for all I haue? Is my ftille like Greenes, or my ieafts like Tarltons?

Do I talke of any counterfeit birds, or hearbs, or ftones, or rake vp any new-found poetry from vnder the wals of Troy? If I do, trip mee with it; but I doe not, therefore Ie bee /fo faucy as trip you with the grand lie. Ware tumbling of whetftones in the darke there my maifters.

This I will proudly boaft (yet am I nothing a kindred to the three brothers) that the vaine which I haue (be it a median vaine, or a madde man) is of my own begetting, and cals no man father in England but my felfe, neyther Euphues, nor Tarlton, nor Greene.

Not Tarlton nor Greene but haue beene contented to let my simple iudgement ouerrule them in some matters of wit. Euphues I readd when I was a little ape in Cambridge, and I then thought it was Ipse ille: it may be excellent good fiill, for ought I know, for I lookt not on it this ten yeare: but to imitate it I abhorre, otherwise than it imitates Plutarch, Ouid and the choicest Latine Authors.

If you be aduisde, I tooke shorteft vowels and longest mutes in the beginning of my booke, as suspicious of being accessarie to the making of a Sonnet wherto Maifter Christophere Birds name is
Fet, there I faide that you mute forth many such phraſes in the course of your booke, which I would point at as I past by: Heere I am as good as my word, for I note that thou beeing aſfraide of beraying thy ſelſe with writing, wouldeft faie be a mute, when it is too late to repent. Againe, thou reuieſt on vs and faift that mutes are courſed and vowels haunted. Thou art no mute, yet ſhalt thou be haunted and courſed to the full. I will neuer leaue thee as long as I am able to lift a pen.

Whether I feeke to bee counted a terrible bulбegger or no, Ile baite thee worse than a bull, so that thou ſhalt desireſome body on thy knees to helpe thee with letters of commendation to Bull, the hangman, that he may diſpatch thee out of the way before more affliſtion come vpon thee.

All the inueſtive and satiricall ſpirits ſhall then bee thy familiars, as the furies in hell are the familiars of ſinfull goſts, to follow them and torment them without intermiffion: thou ſhalt bee double girt with girds, and ſcoft at, till thoſe that ſtand by do nothing but cough with laughing.

Thou faieſt I profefTe the art of railing: thou ſhalt not faie so in vaine, for, if there bee any art or depth in it more than Aretine or Agrippa haue diſcouered or diu’d into, looke that I will ſound it and ſearcſ it to the vttermoſt, but ere I haue done
with thee ile leave thee the miserablest creature that
the sunne euer sawe.

There is no kind of peaceable pleasure in poetrie,
but I can drawe equally in the same yoke with the
haughtiест of those foule-mouthd backbiters that
say I can do nothing but raile.

I haue written in all sorts of humors privately,
I am perswaded more than any yoong man of my
age in England.

The weather is cold, and I am wearie with
confuting: the remainder of the colde contents
of this Epistle be these.

He enuiously indeuors, since he cannot reuenge
himselfe, to incense men of high calling against
me, and wold inforse it into their opinions, that
whatsoever is spoke in Pierce Penniless concerning
Peants, Clownes & hipercticall hot-spurs, Midaffes,
Buckram Giants, & the mightie Prince of Darkness,
is meant of them: let him proue it, or bring the
man to my face to whome I euer made any
vndutiefull exposition of it. I am to be my own
interpreter in this first case: I say, in Pierce Penni-
lesshe I haue set downe nothing but that which I /
haue had my president for, in forraine writers, nor
had I the least allusion to any man set aboue mee
in degree, but onely glanc’ft at vice generallie.

The tale of the Beare and the Foxe, how euer
it may set fooles heads a worke a farre off, yet I
had no concealed ende in it, but in the one to
describe the right nature of a bloudthirfty tyrant,
whose indefinite appetite all the pleasures in the
earth haue no power to bound in goodnes, but
he muft seeke a new felicitie in varietie of cruelty,
and destroying all other mens prosperitie; for the
other, to figure an hypocrite; let it be Martin, if
you will, or some old dog that bites forer than hee,
who secretlie goes and seduceth country Swaines.

Makes them beleue that honny which their bees
brought forth was poisonous and corrupt.

That they may buy honny cheaper than by being
at such charges in keeping bees.

That is not necessary they should have such
stately hives, or lie lucks at such precious
honnicombs.

If this (which is nothing else but to swim with
the streame) be to tell tales as shrewdly as mother
Hubbard, it should seeme mother Hubbard is no
great shrewe, howeuer thou, treading on her heeles
so oft, shee may bee tempted beyonde her ten
commandements.

A little before this, the foresaid fanaticall Phobetor,
geremumble, tirleriwhisco, or what you will, cald
forth the biggest gunshot of my thundering tearmes,
steeped in Aqua fortis and gunpowder, to come and
trie them felues on his paper Target.

But that it is no credite, Galpogas, to discharge
a Cannon againft a lowse, thou shouldst not call in vain: thou shouldst heare Tom a Lincolne roare with /a witnes. Woe worth the daie & the yeare when thou hearest him. I seareblast thee nowe but with the windc of my weapon. With the waft of my words I lay waft all the feeble fortifications of thy wit. Shewe mee the Vniuersities hand and seale that thou art a Doctour sealed and deliuered in the presence of a whole Commenfe-ment, and Ie present thee with my whole artillerie store of eloquence.

A bots on thee for mee for a lumpish, leaden heeld letter dawber, my stile, with treading on thy clammie steps, is growne as heauie gated, as if I were bound to an Aldermans pace, with the irons at Newgate cald the widows Almes.

Ere I was chained to thee thus by the necke, I was as light as the Poet Accius, who was so lowe and so slender, that hee was faine to put lead in his shooes for feare the winde shoulde blowe him into another Countrie.

Those that catch Leopards set cups of wine before them: those that will winne liking and grace of the readers must set before them continually that which shall cheare them and reuiue them.

Gabriell, thou haft not done so, thou canst not doe so, therefore thy works neither haue, nor can any way hinder mee, nor benefit the Printer.
Euen in the packing vp of my booke, a hot ague hath mee by the backe. Maugre sicknesse worst, a leane arme put out of the bed shall grind and pash euerie crum of thy booke into pin-duft.

The next piece of seruice thou doft against Pierce Pennileffe is naming of him wofull pouveretto, and pleasant supposing thou puldst him by the ragged sleeue. Then matchest thou thy selfe to Vlifes, and him to Irus: Irrita sunt hae omnia: it is a sleeuelesse ieast. I haue besliu'd thee already for it: it toucheth the body and not the minde. Befides, I was neuer altogether Peter Pouveretto, ytterly throwne downe, desperately seperated from all means of relieuing my selfe, since I knew how to separate a knaue from an honest man, or throw my cloake ouer my nofe, when I failed by the Counters.

The ragged cognizance on the sleeue, I may say to thee, carried meate in the mouth when time was: doe not dispraise it yet, for it hath many high partakers. Quae sequuntur hujusmodi sunt.

Thou turmoilst thy pia mater to prove base births better than the offspring of many discents, because thou art a mushrumpe sprung vp in one night, a seely mouse begotten on a moulehill, that wouldstayne pearch thy selfe on the mountaines, when thy legges are too short to overcome such a long iourny of glorie.
My margent note, *Meritis expendite causam*, thou wouldst rather than any thing wrest to an endit-
ment of arrogance, & so branch mee into thy tiptoe stocke. I cannot see how thou canst com-
passe it: For though I bad them weigh the cause
by deserts, yet I did not assume too much to my
owne deserts, when I expostulated, why Coblers,
Hoftlers and Carmen shoulde be worth so much,
and I, a scholler and a good fellow, a begger.
How thou haft arrogated to thy selfe more than
*Lucifer*, or any *Miles glorio/us* in the worlde would
doe, I haue already noted at large in his due place
and order. If thou bestowft any curtesie on mee,
and I do not requite it, then call mee cut, and say
I was brought vp at Hoggenorton, where pigges
play on the Organs.

Wert thou well acquainted with me, thou
shouldst per/ceiue that I am very franke where I
take, & send away none empty-handed that giue
mee but halfe an ill worde.

It is a good signe of grace in thee, that thou
confessst thou haft offences enough of thy owne to
answer, though thou beest not chargd with thy
Fathers. Once in thy life thou speakst true yet.
I beleue thee and pittie thee. God make thee
a good man, for thou haft beene a wilde youth
hitherto.

Thy Hexameter versés, or thy hue and crie

*N. 11.*
FOURE LETTERS

after a person as cleare as Christfall, I do not so deeply commend, for al Maißter Spencer long since imbræft it with an ouer-louing sonnet.

Why should friends dissemble one with another? they are very ugly and artleffe. You will never leave your olde trickes of drawing M. Spencer into euerie pybald thing you do. If euer he praifed thee, it was because he had pickt a fine vaine foole out of thee, and he would keepe thee still a foole, by flattrring thee, til such time as he had brought thee into that extreame loue with thy selfe, that thou shouldest run mad with the conceit, and so be scorned of all men.

Yet yet, Gabriell, are not we set non plus: thy roijier-doijierdome hath not daíht vs out of countenance. If anie man use boistrous horfe play, or bee beholding to Carters Logique, it is thy selfe; for with none but clownish and roynish ieasts doft thou rush vppon vs, and keepst such a flurting and a flinging in euerie leafe, as if thou wert the onely reaíy iade in a country.

Skolding, thou saiest, is the language of shrewes, railing the stile of rakehels: what concludst thou from thence? Do I scold? Do I raile?

Scolding & railing is loud miscalling and reuiling one another without wit, speaking euery thing a man knows / by his neighbour, though it bee neuer so contrary to all humanitie and good manners, and
would make the standers by almost perbrake to heare it. Such is thy inuective against Greene, where thou talkst of his lowlines, his surfeting, his beggerie and the mother of Infortunatus infirmities. If I scold, if I raile, I do but cum ratione insaniire: Tully, Ouid, all the olde Poets, Agrippa, Aretine, and the rest are all scolds and railers, and by thy conclusion flat shrewes and rakehels: for I do no more than their examples do warrant mee.

The intoxicate spirit of grisly Euridice, I can toffe ouer as lightly to thee, as thou haft puft it to mee. My hart is præoccupated with better spirits, which haue left her no house-roome: thou haft no spirite, as it should appeare by thy writing: intertaine her and the spirit of the buttery out of hand, or thou wilt be beaten hand-smooth out of Bucklarsbury.

When I parted with thy brother in Pierce Penniless I left him to be tormented world without ende of our Poets and writers about London, for calling them piperly make-playes and make-bates, not doubting but they would drive him to this illue, that he should be constrained to goe to the chiefe beame of his benefice, and there beginning a lamettable speech, with cur scrips, cur perii, ende with Prauem praua decent, iuuat inconcessa voluptas, & so with a trice, truffle vp his life in the string of his sauce-bell. Now heere thou thankst God thou art not so vncharitably bent to put so much
wit in a speech: like a Parfon in Lancashire, that kneeld down on his knees in a zealous passion, and very hartily thankt God he neuer knew what that vile Antichristian Romish Popish Latine meant. Did I exhort inke and paper to pray that they might not bee troubled with / him any more? Inke and paper, if they bee true Protestants, will pray that they may not be contaminated any more with such abhomination of desolation, as the three brothers Apocripha pamphleting.

After all this foule weather ensueth a calme dilatament of others too forward harmefulnes, and thy owne backward irefulnesse: thats dispatcht; the court hath found it otherwise.

Then thou goest about to bribe mee to giue ouer this quarrell, and faist, if I will holde my peace, thou wilt bestowe more complements of rare amplification vpon mee, than euer thou beftowdest on Sir Philip Sidney, and gentle Maifter Spencer.

Thou flatterst mee, and praist mee.

To make mee a small seeming amenes for the injuries thou haft done mee, thou reckonst mee vp amongst the deare louers and professed sonnes of the Muses, Edmund Spencer, Abraham France, Thomas Watson, Samuell Daniell.

With a hundred blessings, and many praiers, thou intreatst mee to loue thee.
Content thy selfe, I will not.

Thou protest'st it was not my person thou mislikt (I am afraide thou wilt make mee thy Ingle) but my fierce running at Parson Richard, excusest mee by my youth, & promisest to cancell thy impertinent Pamphlet.

It were good hanging thee now, thou art in such a good mind; yet for all this, a dogge will be a dogge, & returne to his vomit doe what a man can: thou must haue one squibbe more at the Deuils Orator, & his Dames Poet, or thy penne is not in cleane life. I will permit thee to say what thou wilt, to underlie, (as thou desir'st) the verdit of Fame her selfe, so I may lie aboue thee. Lie aboue thee, tell a greater lie than thou dost, no man is able.

Thus O heauenly Mufe, I thanke thee, for thou haft giu'n me the patience to trauel through the tedious wilderness of this Gomorian Epistle. Not Hercules, when he cleansed the stables of Ægeas, vnder-tooke such a stinking vnfaourie exploit. By thy assistaunce through a whole region of golden lanes haue I journeied, & now am safely arriu'd at not speedily dispatcht, but haftily bungled vp as you see. Graunt that all such flow dispatchers & hastie bunglers, may haue a long time of reproach to repent them in, and not come abroad to corrupt the aire, & imposthinate mens ears with their pan-pudding prose any more. So bee it, say all
English people after mee, that haue eares to heare or eies to reade.

_Feci, feci, feci_, had I my health, now I had leysure to be merry, for I haue almoft wafht my hands of the Doctour.

His own regenerate verses of _the jolly Fly, & Gibeline and Gweelph_, some peraduenture may expect that I should anfwer. So I would if there were anie thing in them which I had not anfwerd before, but there is nothing; if there were, hauing driuen his fword to his head, I respect not what he can do with his dagger. Onely I will looke vpon the laft fonnet of M. _Spencers_ to the right worshipfull Maifter G. H., Doctour of the lawes: or it may so fall out that I will not looke vpon it too, because (Gabriell) though I vehemently fufpect it to bee of thy owne doing, it is popt foorth vnder M. _Spencers_ name, and his name is able to faneftifie any thing, though falsely ascrib'd to it.

The fourth letter of our Orators, to the fame faviourable or indifferent reader, was a letter which this many a long summers day, I dare ieopard my maydenhead / had line hidden in his defke; for it is a shipmans hofe, that will serue any man as well as _Green_ or mee.

To make short, in it, as fortie times before, he brides it and fimpers out a crie, No, forsooth, God dild you hee would not, that hee would: 'None fo
defirous of quiet as hee, good olde man, who with a pure intent of peace, first put fire to the flame that hath hedged him in.

He hath preuented Master Bunny of the second part of his treatise of Pacification; for like some craftie ringleader of rebellion, when hee hath stirred vp a dangerous commotion, and findes, by the too late examination of his forevnxexamined defects in himselfe, that so sweet a roote will hardlie effect correspondent fruits, strait, in pollcie to get his pardon, hee strikes faile to the tempeft of sedition, and is thrice as earnest in preaching pacification, obedience, and submission: so Gabriel, when he hath stirrd vp againft me what tumults he can in stationers Shops, and left the quier of his enuie not an arrow vndrawne out, hee finds, by the audit of his ill consumed defects, that he is not of force inough to hold out: wherefore in pollcie, to avoide further arrearages of infamie, hee tires the text of reconciliation out of breath, and hopeth by the interceffion of a cuppe of white wine and fugar, to be made friends with his fellow writers.

It cannot chooofe but he must of necessitie be a very fore fellow, that is so familiar with white wine & fugar, for white wine, in a maner, is good for nothing but to wash fores in, and smudge vp withered beauty with. Well, for all hee would haue Pierce make no warres on him, he makes
warres on Pierce Pennileffe, he bebeggereth him again in this epistle verie bountifullie: hee faies that Lordes muft take heede how they Lord it in his presence.

That the Ass is the onelie Author he alleadgeth.

That Greene is an Ass in print, and he a calfe in print.

That they are both chieftaines in licentiousnesse and that truth can faie the abominable villanies of such base shifting companions, good for nothing but to cast away themselues, spoile their adherents, &c.

For my beggerie, let that trauell the countries: I haue faide more for it than a richer man would haue done, but that I take vppon me to Lord it ouer great Lords, thou art a moft lewd tungd lurden to faie it.

Muft they take heede how they Lord it in my presence, what muft they doe in thy presence?

That sitting like a looker on
Of this worlds stage, doft note with critique pen
The sharpe dislikes of each condition;
Ne fawnest for the fauour of the great,
Nor fearest foolish reprehenstion,
But freelie doft of what thee lift intreate,
Like a great Lord of peereleffe libertie,
Lifting the good up to high honours seate,
And th' euill damning euermore to die:
For life and death is in thy doomefull writing.
Whereas thou faist the Asfē, in a manner, is the only Author I alleadge, I must know how you define an Asfē before I can tell how to answere you; for \textit{Cornelius Agrippa} maketh all the Philosophers, Oratours, and Poets that euer were, Asfēs: and if so, you vnderstand that I alleadge no Author but the Asfē; for [if] all Authors are Asfēs, why I am for you; if otherwise, thou art worse than a \textit{Cumane Asfē}, to leape before thou lookst, and condemne a man without caufe.

What Authors doft thou alleadge in thy booke? not /two but any Grammer Scholler might haue alleadgd.

There is not three kernels of more than common learning in all thy \textit{Foure Letters}. Common learning? not common fense in some places.

Of force I muſt graunt that \textit{Greene} came oftner in print than men of judgement allowed off, but neuerthelesse he was a daintie slauë to content the taile of a Tearme, and stufte Seruing mens pockets.

An Asfē, \textit{Gabriel}, it is harde thou shouldest name him: for calling me Calfe, it breakes no square, but if I bee a calfe, it is in comparifon of such an Oxe as thy selfe.

\textit{The chiestaines of licentiousnesse, and truth can say the abominable villanies of such base foisting companions, good for nothing, &c.} I am of the mind wee shall not digesft this neither.
Anfwere me succintē & expeditē, what one period any way leaning to licentioufnes, canft thou pro-duce in Pierce Pennileffe?

I talke of a great matter when I tell thee of a period, for I know two feuerall periods or full pointes, in this laft epiftle, at least fortie lines long a piece.

For the order of my life, it is as ciuil as a ciuil orenge: I lurke in no corners, but conuerfe in a house of credit, as well gouerned as any Colledge, where there bee more rare qualified men, and selected good Schollers than in any Noblemans house that I knowe in England.

If I had committed such abominable villanies, or were a base shifting companion, it floode not with my Lords honour to keepe me, but if thou haft faide it, & canft not proue it, what flandrous dishonor haft thou done him, to giue it out that he keeps the committers of such abominable villanies and base shifting companions, when they are farre honefter than thy selfe.

If I were by thee, I would plucke thee by the beard, and spit in thy face, but I would dare thee, and vrge thee beyonde all excuse, to disclofe and proue for thy heart bloud, what villanie or base shifting by mee thou canft. I defie all the worlde in that respect.

Because thou vsedst at Cambridge to shift for
thy Friday nights suppers, and cofen poore victuallers and pie-wiues of Doctours cheese and puddinges, thou thinkest me one of the same religion too.

What Greene was, let some other answere for him as much as I haue done: I had no tuition ouer him: he might haue writ another Galatæo of manners, for his manners euerie time I came in his companie: I saw no such base shifting or abhominable villanie by him. Something there was which I haue heard, not feene, that hee had not that regarde to his credite in which had beene requisite he shoulde.

What a Calimunco am I to plead for him, as though I were as neere him as his owne skinne. A thousande there bee that haue more reason to speake in his behalfe than I, who, since I first knew him about town, haue beene two yeares together and not feene him.

But Ile doe as much for any man, especially for a dead man, that cannot speake for himselfe. Let vs heare how we are good for nothing but to cast awaie our felues, spoile our adherents, praie on our fauourers, dishonour our Patrons. Haue I euer tooke any likelie course of casting away my selfe?

Whom canst thou name that kept me company, and reapt any discommoditie by mee? I can name
divers good Gentlemen that have beene my adherents and fauourers a long time. Let them report howe I haue spoilde them, or praid on them, or put them to one pennie detriment since I first consorted with the.

Haue an eie to the maine-chaunce, for no sooner shall they understand what thou haft said by mee of them, but theye goe neere to haue thee about the eares for this geare, one after another.

My Patrons, or anie that bind me to them by the least good turne, there is no man in England that is, or shall (for my small power) bee more thankefull vnto than I. Neuer was I vntthankefull vnto any, no, not to those of whome for deedes I receiued nothing but vnperformed deede promising words. It is an honor to be accusde, and not conuinsft.

One of these months I shall challenge martir-dome to my selfe, and writ large stories of the persecution of tongues. Troth I am as like to perfecute as be perfected. Let him take vp his Croffe and bleffe himselfe that croffeth mee, for I will croffe shinnes with him though euerie sentence of his were a thousande tunnes of discourses, as Gabriel faith, euerie sentence of his is a discourse. Quods, quods give me my Text pen againe, for I haue a little more Text to launce.

The secretaries of art and nature, if it were not
for friulous contentions, might bestead the commo-welth with manie puissant engins. As, for example, Bacon's brazen nose, Architas' wooden doue, dancing bals, fire breathing gourdes, artificial flies to hang in the aire by themselu'es, an eggshell that shall run vp to the toppe of a speare.

Archimedes made a heau'n of brasse, but we haue nothing to do with olde brasse and iron.

Apollonius Regimontanus did manie pretie iugling tricks, but wee had rather drinke out of a glasse than /a Jugge: vse a little brittle wit of our owne, than borrow any miracle mettall of the Deuils.

Amongst all other stratagems and puissant engins, what say you to Mates Pumpe in Cheapside, to pumpe ouer mutton and porridge into Fraunce? this colde weather our fouldiors, I can tell you, haue need of it, and, poore field mife, they haue almoost got the colicke and stone with eating of prouant.

Confider of it well, for it is better than all Bacon's, Architas, Archimedes, Apollonius or Regimontanus deuices; for Gabriell, that professeth all these, with all their helpe cannot make the bias bowle at Saffron Walden run downe the hill, when it is throwne downe with the hardest hand that may bee, but it will turne vp the hill againe in spite of a mans teeth, and, that which is worst, glue no reason for it.
The Parrat and the Peacock have leisure to renew and repolish their expired works. You speak like a friend: wele listen to you when you have repolished and expired your perfected degree. A Demy Doctor, what a shame is it?

Because your books do call for a little more drinke, and a fewe more clothes when they are gone to bed, that is, when they lie dead, you thinke ours do so too. No, no, we doe not vs to clappe a coat ouer a ierkin, or thrust any of the children of our braine into their mothers wombe againe, & beget them a new after they are once borne. If it bee a horne booke at his first conception, let it be a horne booke still, and turne not eat in the panne, conuert the Paternoster to a Primer, when it hath begd it selfe out at the elbowes vp and downe the cuntrey.

Thou didst thou knewst not what in eeking this thy short-wafted Pamphlet, iwis, as thou faist of thy selfe / Thou art an old trewant, fitter to plaie the dumbe dogge with some antients, than the hiffing snaie.

Who be those antient dumbe dogs? we shall haue you a Martiniift when all comes to all, because you cannot thrue with the Ciuill Law, and that you may marry her for any thing you are a kindred to her: therfore you will compare Whitegift and Cartwright, white and blacke together, name the
higheft gouernours of the Church without giuing them anie reuerence or titles of honour, imbrace anie religion which will be euen with the profeffion that fauors not you.

There is no baile or mainprife for it, but wee muft haue you in the first peeping forth of the spring, preaching out of a Pulpit in the woods: you haue put on wolues raiment already, seduced manie simple people vnder the habit of a sheepe and Wolves print. If you protest & lie any more, it is not your ending here like a sermon, that will make you bee reputed for a saint.

Readers, a decaied student, lately shipwrackt with Si vales bene est, hauing foure Lightors of Letters, cleane caft away on the rocks called the Bishop & his Clarks, desires you all to pray for him, and he will recommend you all to God the next sermon he penneth, or his brother Richard.

He hath a mind to pay every man his owne, though hee hath sustained great losse in fight, that which he cannot effect he befeecheth the Lord to accomplish, and euen to worke a miracle vpon the deafe.

Lord if it be thy will, let him be an Affe still. Gentlemen, I haue no more to say to the Doctor dispose of the victorie as you please: shortly I will present you with something that shal be better than nothing, onely giue mee a gentle hire for my
durtie day labor, and I am your bounden Orator for euer.

Son netto.

Were there no warres, poore men should haue no peace:
Vncessant warres with waspes and droanes I crie:
Hee that begins, oft knows not how to cease,
They haue begun, Ile follow till I die.

Ile heare no truce, wrong gets no graue in mee,
Abuse pell mell encounter with abuse:
Write hee againe, Ile write eternally.
Who feedes reuenge hath found an endlesse Muse.

If death ere made his blacke dart of a pen,
My penne his speciall Baily shall becum:
Somewhat Ile be reputed of mongst men,
By striking of this duns or dead or dum.

Awaite the world the Tragedy of wrath:
What next I paint shall tread no common path.

Aut nunquam tentes aut perfice.

Tho. Nafhe.
for effect, read effect. In the 4 of R
the 3 for before upon, read below upon him:
the 2 for Arie in present, read Are in present:
home warme, read inherent incite warme: in the
for Philadelphia, in the 7 for inherent incite-
for patience, read Lior good painigent: in the 5
result, read Lior good painigent. In the 4 of o
read headman, let his hand: idea, for headman
let hand: read, let his hand: ideam for headman
read Baboune his brother: in the 7 for allegorized
read Baboune his brother: in the second page of a for Baboune brother.

which are thus to be decipher'd,

finaly, presented vague many false Girgises,

particle, gett away conitinly, and colojo him in his
he'll, because E an warfare in any one picture, to
hill from my open invention: e concludeth will
when that E an warfare and directe dishonest
respect, let every by him correspondent.
this connoted Poute Letters, of some other figure
some Eet, and unseined waders, either in this
this book in charge of latter is our advantage
them, whatsoever for the most part is here in

Book.

Obervations for the Readers of this

CONFUTED.
FOURE LETTERS CONFUTED.

for vertuous Syr John Norris, read victorious Syr John Norris: in the 5 page of n for I introduce in a discontented Scholler, read I introduce a discontented Scholler: in the 8 for His affentrion, reade His assention. In the 5 of I for verie company, reade verie timpanie. In the 5 page of κ for in this first case, reade first in this case. [Corrected in the places.—G.]

FINIS.